THE UNIVERSE AND THE HOLY QURAN

الكون والقرآن الكريم

by

Mohammed-Ali Hassan al-Hilly

Translated by

E. A. Nassir

The Late Mohammed-Ali Hassan,
The interpreter of the holy Quran and the Bible,
In his elderly ,with the mole appearing evidently on his right cheek

بِسْمِ ٱللَّهِ ٱلرَّحْمَٰنِ ٱلرَّحِيمِ

A Forward by the Translator

The Quran is the word of God that cannot be imitated by any creature. The Quran is the last heavenly scripture, conveyed by Gabriel the angel, who revealed them to Prophet Mohammed, peace be on him. The reason for revealing the Quran in Arabic was that the prophet was an Arab, and his folk were Arabs, so it should be revealed in their language that they might understand it. It is the miracle of Prophet Mohammed - Peace be on him: eloquent, including many scientific facts that have only been discovered recently; some secrets are even still undiscovered; it is a cure for many psychological diseases; it is a blessed book that increases by interpretation and explanation. It's meaning is above generations and ages; because it is the word of God to which no addition or omission can occur. Therefore, **it is impossible to translate the Quran**, but only its meaning and interpretation may possibly be translated according to the understanding of the translator; i.e. another translator may translate the meaning in a better way according to his understanding and expression. So, according to the instruction of the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, I have preserved the Quranic revelations as they are in Arabic, and tried to translate the meaning to English, according to the interpreter Mohammed-Ali Hassan. I have kept the explanation of the (aya) between rounded brackets like these ( ), while I put the other words which further explain the meaning , but which are not lit. Present in the origin, I put such words between square brackets like these [ ].

Therefore, the Quran is in Arabic only; the words in English and in other languages are only the translation of the meaning, the explanation and the interpretation; but they are not the Quran.

I ask God for His forgiveness, and hope for His mercy, and seek after His good pleasure.

E. A. Nassir (the translator)
eanassir@yahoo.co.uk
29/ 4/ 2005

بِسْمِ ٱللَّهِ ٱلرَّحْمَٰنِ ٱلرَّحِيمِ

Preface to the First and Second Arabic Editions

The explanation: (In[1] the name of God[2], Most Gracious[3], Most Merciful[4])

Praise be to God Who created nations, and taught by the pen; taught man what he did not know, and revealed [by the angel Gabriel] the Quran including knowledge and wisdom. And peace is on Mohammed the best man among the Arabs and the non-Arabs.

I sought God's help to write this book, and He led me to the way of the truth; I did my best seeking the good-pleasure of God, and He guided me to my reason and wisdom [and I hope to be admitted into Paradise in the Hereafter.]

As regards my book, I have made it four parts:

- In the first one, I describe the celestial bodies like the sun, the moon, the stars and the satellites; I have called it: "The **Universe and the Quran"**
- In the second part, I describe spirits, angels, genies [or demons], and the Day of the gathering-together and the Judgment; I gave it the title of **"Man after Death"**
- I called the third part: **"The Dispute with Atheists"**;
- While, in the fourth part, I explained and interpreted the mysterious ayat (or revelations) of the Quran, which none but God knows their meaning; I called this part: **"The Ambiguous Quranic Revelations".**

It will be followed by the interpretation of the Quran as a whole, which I call: **"The Interpretation of the Revelation"**, that we shall publish, as soon as possible, if God permits and wills.

---

(1) i.e. I begin the recitation in the name of God.

(2) God-be exalted- is called in Arabic: **Allah**; in Hebrew: **Jehovah**; in English: **God**; in Persian: **Khodah** and in other languages may be named by different names. He is the same our Lord and your Lord; He is the Lord of nations and worlds.

(3) i.e. Merciful to both believers and disbelievers, in this life of the World.

(4) i.e. Merciful –only –to believers, in the Hereafter.

Introduction

I was dwelling at Hilla, which is a province in Iraq; I had a studio for photography, on the side of a street in the main part of the city, near the intermediate school for boys; I was a photographer and most of the students of the school, the intermediate and the secondary, used to take their photographs – at my studio – which they needed for their school certificates.

I heard, from some of them, some words of atheism and disbelief that annoyed me. Some of them asked about some Quranic revelations, mocking and laughing at them; that were because of their ignorance about the Quran and its interpretation. These are some examples of their questions:

Question: We have learnt in the school that the sky is the space, and that there are no material or solid layers above us, then how does it come to be true that God – be exalted – said in the Quran, 13: 17

﴿ أَنزَلَ مِنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ مَآءً فَسَالَتْ أَوْدِيَةٌۢ بِقَدَرِهَا فَٱحْتَمَلَ ٱلسَّيْلُ زَبَدًا رَّابِيًا ﴾

The explanation: (He sends down – from the sky – water[1]; so that the valleys flow [with water] according to their measure[2])?

Question: We have learnt that the sun is stationary, andthe earth revolves around the sun; then how does it come to be true that God – be exalted – says in the Quran, 36: 38

﴿ وَٱلشَّمْسُ تَجْرِى لِمُسْتَقَرٍّ لَّهَا ذَٰلِكَ تَقْدِيرُ ٱلْعَزِيزِ ٱلْعَلِيمِ ﴾

The explanation: (And the sun moves along to a place of rest for it.)?

And so on, their questions were as such; for this reason, I

---

(1) i.e. rain-water.

(2) i.e. according to the measure or size of the mountains upon which the rain water falls.

wished to compile a book about this subject, and to make it an answer to atheists and a guide for the ignorant; I asked for God's help to write this book, and that He might lead me to the way of the truth, I made my best seeking the good pleasure of God, so He let me succeed in serving Him, as He – be exalted – said in His glorious Book [: the Quran], 29: 69

﴿ وَٱلَّذِينَ جَٰهَدُوا۟ فِينَا لَنَهْدِيَنَّهُمْ سُبُلَنَا ۚ
وَإِنَّ ٱللَّهَ لَمَعَ ٱلْمُحْسِنِينَ ﴿٦٩﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (As for those who strive for Our [cause[1]], We will surely guide them into Our ways[2], and, certainly, God is with the charitable [to the poor.])

Lastly, I thank God, for that He gave me of His surplus a lot, and made every difficulty easy for me.

Mohammed-Ali Hassan al-Hilly
[Died / 1991]

(1) i.e. in Our way and for Our sake.
(2) i.e. We guide them to monotheism, and to follow the Torah, the Gospel and the Quran.

THE FIRST PART

The Formation and Creation of Celestial Objects

The Sky or Heaven

At beginning, we start by the "sky" or "heaven"; because it is the origin, and to it the final resort will be.

Some people think that the sky is a hard material layer that fills the space, and that it is constituted of seven layers, some of them consist of red hyacinth or ruby, some of them of white jewel, while another layer is of greenish jewel …etc. I say: the sky is the space and nothing else. Therefore, the Quranic revelation 13: 19, where God –be exalted - says: أنزلَ مِنَ السماءِ (ماءً); **the explanation:** (He sends down –from the sky – water), means: He makes the water fall down from the space; this is indicated by His saying –be exalted – in the Quran, 34:2

﴿ يَعْلَمُ مَا يَلِجُ فِى ٱلْأَرْضِ وَمَا يَخْرُجُ مِنْهَا وَمَا يَنزِلُ مِنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ وَمَا يَعْرُجُ فِيهَا ۚ
وَهُوَ ٱلرَّحِيمُ ٱلْغَفُورُ ﴿٢﴾ ﴾

The explanation: ([God] knows what [animals] go inside the earth and what [animals] come out from it, and what [birds] descend from the sky and what [flying animals] ascend through it, and he is the Most Merciful, the Most Forgiving.)

Therefore, (and what [flying birds] ascend through it) gives a proof that the sky is not a hard material layer; if it were a hard layer, then He might say: what [flying animals] ascend to it; but God –be exalted –said: (و ما يعرجُ فيها) i.e. (and what [flying animals] ascend through it); it means: while he is ascending, he is in the sky from the beginning of his ascension till he reaches to where he wants.100

This is like His saying –be exalted – in the Quran, 57: 4

﴿ يَعْلَمُ مَا يَلِجُ فِي ٱلْأَرْضِ وَمَا يَخْرُجُ مِنْهَا وَمَا يَنزِلُ مِنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ وَمَا يَعْرُجُ فِيهَا وَهُوَ مَعَكُمْ أَيْنَ مَا كُنتُمْ ۚ وَٱللَّهُ بِمَا تَعْمَلُونَ بَصِيرٌ ﴿٤﴾ ﴾

The explanation:([God] knows what goes inside the earth and what comes out of it, and what descends from the sky and what ascends through it; and He is with you wheresoever you may be; and God sees well all that you do.)

God –be celebrated His praise – said also in the Quran, 30: 48

﴿ ٱللَّهُ ٱلَّذِي يُرْسِلُ ٱلرِّيَٰحَ فَتُثِيرُ سَحَابًا فَيَبْسُطُهُۥ فِي ٱلسَّمَآءِ كَيْفَ يَشَآءُ ﴿٤٨﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (God is He Who sends the winds and they stir up [and collect] clouds which He spreads in the sky as He pleases.)

So if there were solid layers above us, then He would say: And spreads them under the sky as He pleases.

God –be exalted –said also in the Quran, 6: 125

﴿ فَمَن يُرِدِ ٱللَّهُ أَن يَهْدِيَهُۥ يَشْرَحْ صَدْرَهُۥ لِلْإِسْلَٰمِ ۖ وَمَن يُرِدْ أَن يُضِلَّهُۥ يَجْعَلْ صَدْرَهُۥ ضَيِّقًا حَرَجًا كَأَنَّمَا يَصَّعَّدُ فِي ٱلسَّمَآءِ ﴿١٢٥﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (Whomsoever God desires to guide, He makes him rejoice in [accepting] the Islam; whomsoever He desires to lead astray, He makes him dejected [accepting not the invitation to the Islam] and embarrassed, as if he were engaged in ascending in the sky.)

He –be exalted –said in the Quran, 17: 93

﴿ أَوْ يَكُونَ لَكَ بَيْتٌ مِّن زُخْرُفٍ أَوْ تَرْقَىٰ فِي ٱلسَّمَآءِ ﴾

The explanation: (Or you[1] have a house decorated [with

(1) i.e. Mohammed –peace be on him. These were some of the miracles, which the idolaters of Mecca – arrogantly – demanded of Mohammed in order that they might believe him.

gold], or you ascend up into heaven[1], …etc.)

Therefore, His saying –be exalted – (أو ترقى في السّماء), the explanation:(or you ascend up into heaven), indicates that the sky is the space; because if there was a solid material layer then He would say: or you ascend to the sky or heaven.

The Arabic poetry includes some examples indicating that the word "sky" gives the same meaning.

Therefore, any word "sky" in the Quran (in singular) means the space, but when it comes in plural, it will have some other meaning that we shall explain in details in what follows, by the help of God – be exalted and be celebrated His praise.

The Heavens

We have just explained that every word 'sky' or 'heaven' (in singular) in the Quran, means the space. I say that the space is not empty, but it contains gaseous layers, ethereal layers and material objects.

Then, every word سماوات or "heavens' (in plural), in the Quran, means one of these three, and we shall explain each of them in details, with God's help.

(1) The Gaseous Heavens [the Firmament]

Know that the Earth was a sun, at the beginning, and it was a flaming object, from which the gases emerged to fill its atmosphere. Then, when its life ended, its surface became cold, so it was converted into an earth. Afterwards, it exploded, and became nine pieces, that started to revolve around a new sun.

We don't want to speak here about the Earth, but about the Firmament (or the gaseous heavens), and we shall explain afterwards about the formation of the Earth, in details. Now, as you know the Earth was a flaming object, so you can realize that

(1) i.e. in order to bring down a book from heaven, written in it that you, Mohammed, are a messenger from God, and that you had really ascended in the sky; we may then believe!

﴿ يَعْلَمُ مَا يَلِجُ فِي ٱلْأَرْضِ وَمَا يَخْرُجُ مِنْهَا وَمَا يَنزِلُ مِنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ وَمَا يَعْرُجُ فِيهَا وَهُوَ مَعَكُمْ أَيْنَ مَا كُنتُمْ ۚ وَٱللَّهُ بِمَا تَعْمَلُونَ بَصِيرٌ ﴿٤﴾ ﴾

The explanation:([God] knows what goes inside the earth and what comes out of it, and what descends from the sky and what ascends through it; and He is with you wheresoever you may be; and God sees well all that you do.)

God –be celebrated His praise – said also in the Quran, 30: 48

﴿ ٱللَّهُ ٱلَّذِي يُرْسِلُ ٱلرِّيَٰحَ فَتُثِيرُ سَحَابًا فَيَبْسُطُهُۥ فِي ٱلسَّمَآءِ كَيْفَ يَشَآءُ ﴿٤٨﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (God is He Who sends the winds and they stir up [and collect] clouds which He spreads in the sky as He pleases.)

So if there were solid layers above us, then He would say: And spreads them under the sky as He pleases.

God –be exalted –said also in the Quran, 6: 125

﴿ فَمَن يُرِدِ ٱللَّهُ أَن يَهْدِيَهُۥ يَشْرَحْ صَدْرَهُۥ لِلْإِسْلَٰمِ ۖ وَمَن يُرِدْ أَن يُضِلَّهُۥ يَجْعَلْ صَدْرَهُۥ ضَيِّقًا حَرَجًا كَأَنَّمَا يَصَّعَّدُ فِي ٱلسَّمَآءِ ﴿١٢٥﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (Whomsoever God desires to guide, He makes him rejoice in [accepting] the Islam; whomsoever He desires to lead astray, He makes him dejected [accepting not the invitation to the Islam] and embarrassed, as if he were engaged in ascending in the sky.)

He –be exalted –said in the Quran, 17: 93

﴿ أَوْ يَكُونَ لَكَ بَيْتٌ مِّن زُخْرُفٍ أَوْ تَرْقَىٰ فِي ٱلسَّمَآءِ ﴾

The explanation: (Or you[1] have a house decorated [with

(1) i.e. Mohammed –peace be on him. These were some of the miracles, which the idolaters of Mecca – arrogantly – demanded of Mohammed in order that they might believe him.

gold], or you ascend up into heaven[1], …etc.)

Therefore, His saying –be exalted – (أو ترقى في السماء), the explanation:(or you ascend up into heaven), indicates that the sky is the space; because if there was a solid material layer then He would say: or you ascend to the sky or heaven.

The Arabic poetry includes some examples indicating that the word "sky" gives the same meaning.

Therefore, any word "sky" in the Quran (in singular) means the space, but when it comes in plural, it will have some other meaning that we shall explain in details in what follows, by the help of God – be exalted and be celebrated His praise.

The Heavens

We have just explained that every word 'sky' or 'heaven' (in singular) in the Quran, means the space. I say that the space is not empty, but it contains gaseous layers, ethereal layers and material objects.

Then, every word سماوات or "heavens' (in plural), in the Quran, means one of these three, and we shall explain each of them in details, with God's help.

(1) The Gaseous Heavens [the Firmament]

Know that the Earth was a sun, at the beginning, and it was a flaming object, from which the gases emerged to fill its atmosphere. Then, when its life ended, its surface became cold, so it was converted into an earth. Afterwards, it exploded, and became nine pieces, that started to revolve around a new sun.

We don't want to speak here about the Earth, but about the Firmament (or the gaseous heavens), and we shall explain afterwards about the formation of the Earth, in details. Now, as you know the Earth was a flaming object, so you can realize that

(1) i.e. in order to bring down a book from heaven, written in it that you, Mohammed, are a messenger from God, and that you had really ascended in the sky; we may then believe!

flame and smoke emerge from every flaming object. However, the gases are still emerging from the Earth; most of such gases emerge from volcanoes, petroleum wells, as do they too emerge from mineral water springs.

One of newspapers mentioned the following:

"The Natural Gas

The gas emerging from Vendley city in Ohio in America, is estimated as sixty million cubic feet; and about forty millions from the neighboring cities. Most of this gas is utilized as fuel. After starting to utilize the natural gas, people started to give their opinion about its origin, and the consequences of its extraction from inside the Earth. Some of the people said that: the Earth has an inner hollow, and that its hollow is full of this gas, which is the cause of it's hanging in the space! Therefore, its extraction from inside the Earth is very dangerous; because if it becomes empty, it will be cracked and will be destroyed, and will fall from its place in the heaven!!!"

Therefore, the origin of the firmament (or the gaseous heavens) is from the Earth, and it fills its atmosphere. Similarly, each one of the terrestrial planets has its seven gaseous layers. God –be exalted – said in the Quran, 65:12

﴿ ٱللَّهُ ٱلَّذِى خَلَقَ سَبۡعَ سَمَٰوَٰتٍ وَمِنَ ٱلۡأَرۡضِ مِثۡلَهُنَّ ﴾

The explanation: (God [is He] Who created seven [ancient ethereal] heavens, and the equal [number of gaseous heavens he –then – created, out] of the earth)

The interpretation: It is God Who had created seven ethereal layers in the ancient time, and then He created the Earth, and created - from the Earth - seven gaseous layers.

The gaseous layers, actually, are the blueness that we see in the sky. Whereas we cannot see the ethereal layers because the ether cannot be seen by material beings, but can be seen by spiritual beings.

Therefore, the origin of the gaseous heavens is from the

Earth, and that was when the Earth was a flaming sun; and the emergence of gases was in the form of smoke, which was a mixture of seven gases. And due to the fact that some of the gases are heavy, while some others are light; they started to separate from each other; because the heavy one came down while the light gas went up, till they became seven layers: the first layer is the ozone gas [layer] about 25 miles away from us, the other layers came under it like the layers of the sulphur dioxide (SO2), the hydrogen, the helium and the rest of the gases. This is roughly speaking, for we cannot know those gases exactly because we are on the Earth and the gases are high up in the sky. The indication, that the sky is gaseous, can be seen in the following Quranic revelation 41:11-12

﴿ ثُمَّ ٱسۡتَوَىٰٓ إِلَى ٱلسَّمَآءِ وَهِىَ دُخَانٌ فَقَالَ لَهَا وَلِلۡأَرۡضِ ٱئۡتِيَا طَوۡعًا أَوۡ كَرۡهًا قَالَتَآ أَتَيۡنَا طَآئِعِينَ ۝١١ فَقَضَىٰهُنَّ سَبۡعَ سَمَٰوَاتٍ فِى يَوۡمَيۡنِ ﴾

The explanation: (Then He tended to [build[1]] the sky and it had been smoke; He said to it and to the earth, "Come, both of you, willingly or loathe." The two said, "We [all] have come obedient." And He separated them into seven firmaments in two days.)

The interpretation:

- (Then He tended to [build] the sky) means: the sky of the Earth,
- (And it had been smoke) means the smoke that emerged from the Earth which was in fact a mixture of seven gases,
- (He said to it) i.e. the sky [or the gaseous heaven]
- (And to the earth, "Come, both of you,) to the gravitation
- (Willingly or loath." The two said, "We [all] have come obedient" And He separated them) and made them
- (Seven firmaments); The explanation: He separated that smoke, and made it seven layers

(1) i.e. to make the layers of the gaseous sky distinctive and to build them, or to arrange them as successive layers.

- (In two days), i.e. within a period of two thousand years; that is because one day of the Hereafter equals one thousand of our years.

Moreover, God –be exalted – said in the Quran, 2: 29

﴿ هُوَ ٱلَّذِى خَلَقَ لَكُم مَّا فِى ٱلْأَرْضِ جَمِيعًا ثُمَّ ٱسْتَوَىٰٓ إِلَى ٱلسَّمَآءِ فَسَوَّىٰهُنَّ سَبْعَ سَمَٰوَٰتٍ ۚ وَهُوَ بِكُلِّ شَىْءٍ عَلِيمٌ ﴿٢٩﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (It is He That has created for you all[1] that is in the earth. Then aimed at [building[2]] the sky [of the earth], and fashioned them as seven heavens, and He is the Omniscient about everything.)

It means: He fashioned seven gaseous layers after being one layer of smoke.

So the gaseous heavens are mentioned in the Quran in three ways:

a- <u>One time,</u> it is mentioned together with the Earth, but no "and" between them, but there will be another word intervening between them; like the Quranic revelations 19: 90-91, when God –be exalted – said:

﴿ تَكَادُ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتُ يَتَفَطَّرْنَ مِنْهُ وَتَنشَقُّ ٱلْأَرْضُ وَتَخِرُّ ٱلْجِبَالُ هَدًّا ﴿٩٠﴾ أَن دَعَوْا۟ لِلرَّحْمَٰنِ وَلَدًا ﴿٩١﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (Because of it[3], the heavens are about to crack, the earth splits asunder and the mountains fall crushed; that they attributed to the Most Gracious[4] a son!)

The "heavens", here, and means the gaseous layers because He intervened between the "heavens" and the "earth" by many words: (are about to crack), then He mentioned the "earth".

Moreover, God –be exalted – said in the Quran, 31: 10

---

(1) The plant, animal, river…etc.

(2) i.e. to separate the layers of the gaseous heaven, and to build it.

(3) i.e. their claim that God has a son or daughters.

(4) The "Most Gracious" means: His mercy is for both believers and disbelievers, in the life of the World.

﴿ خَلَقَ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ بِغَيْرِ عَمَدٍ تَرَوْنَهَا وَأَلْقَىٰ فِى ٱلْأَرْضِ رَوَٰسِىَ أَن تَمِيدَ بِكُمْ ﴾

The explanation: (He created the [gaseous] heavens without pillars you can see, and He cast on the earth firm [mountains], lest it sway irregularly with you)

The "heavens", here, means the gaseous layers, because many words intervene between the "heaves" and the "earth"; i.e. (without pillars you can see and He cast on).

In addition, God –be exalted – said in the Quran, 31: 20

﴿ أَلَمْ تَرَوْا۟ أَنَّ ٱللَّهَ سَخَّرَ لَكُم مَّا فِى ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَمَا فِى ٱلْأَرْضِ وَأَسْبَغَ عَلَيْكُمْ نِعَمَهُۥ ظَٰهِرَةً وَبَاطِنَةً ﴾

The explanation: (Have you not seen that God has subjected to you all that is in the [gaseous] heavens and all that is in the earth, and has lavished on you His bounties, [both] apparent and unapparent.)

So the Lord –be exalted – has separated between mentioning "the heavens" and mentioning "the earth" by two words, which are و ما في i.e. (all that is in).

b- <u>**In the second form:**</u> the "heavens" are mentioned after the "earth", e.g. God -be exalted – says in the Quran, 20: 4

﴿ تَنزِيلًا مِّمَّنْ خَلَقَ ٱلْأَرْضَ وَٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ ﴾

The explanation: (A revelation [of the Quran] from [God] Who created the earth and the high heavens.)

So, the "heavens", here, and means the gaseous layers because it is mentioned after the "earth"

God -be exalted – said in the Quran, 35: 40

﴿ قُلْ أَرَءَيْتُمْ شُرَكَآءَكُمُ ٱلَّذِينَ تَدْعُونَ مِن دُونِ ٱللَّهِ أَرُونِى مَاذَا خَلَقُوا۟ مِنَ ٱلْأَرْضِ أَمْ لَهُمْ شِرْكٌ فِى ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ ﴾

The explanation: (Say: "tell me your opinion concerning

your associates whom you call on besides God; show me what it is they created of [all] the earth[s], or have they a share in the [gaseous] heavens?)

The "heavens", here, and means the gaseous layers; because they are mentioned after mentioning the earth.

The Glorious Lord said in the Quran, 39:67

﴿ وَمَا قَدَرُوا۟ ٱللَّهَ حَقَّ قَدْرِهِۦ وَٱلْأَرْضُ جَمِيعًا قَبْضَتُهُۥ يَوْمَ ٱلْقِيَٰمَةِ وَٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتُ مَطْوِيَّٰتٌۢ بِيَمِينِهِۦ ۚ سُبْحَٰنَهُۥ وَتَعَٰلَىٰ عَمَّا يُشْرِكُونَ ﴾

The explanation: (And they do not esteem God as He should be esteemed, while the earth, all, will be [but] His handful on the Doomsday, and the heavens will be rolled up by His right hand. Celebrated be His praise and exalted be He above what they associate [with Him as partners.])

And as such, any word "heaven" in the Quran mentioned after the "earth", then God –be exalted –means the gaseous layers.

c- **In the third type,** the "heavens" will be mentioned alone without mentioning the "earth" with it, e.g. God –be exalted –says in the Quran, 23: 17

﴿ وَلَقَدْ خَلَقْنَا فَوْقَكُمْ سَبْعَ طَرَآئِقَ وَمَا كُنَّا عَنِ ٱلْخَلْقِ غَٰفِلِينَ ﴿١٧﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And We have created above you seven passages [i.e. seven heavens]; nor are We heedless of creatures.)

So the "passages", here, means the gaseous layers and who dwell therein, i.e. genies (or demons.)

And God –be exalted –says in the Quran, 67: 3-4:

﴿ ٱلَّذِى خَلَقَ سَبْعَ سَمَٰوَٰتٍ طِبَاقًا ۖ مَّا تَرَىٰ فِى خَلْقِ ٱلرَّحْمَٰنِ مِن تَفَٰوُتٍ ۖ فَٱرْجِعِ ٱلْبَصَرَ هَلْ تَرَىٰ مِن فُطُورٍ ﴿٣﴾ ثُمَّ ٱرْجِعِ ٱلْبَصَرَ كَرَّتَيْنِ يَنقَلِبْ إِلَيْكَ ٱلْبَصَرُ خَاسِئًا وَهُوَ حَسِيرٌ ﴿٤﴾ ﴾

The explanation: ([God] who has created seven stratified heavens; you cannot see any non-observance in the creation of

the Most Gracious! Then [look at the sky and] turn your [eye-] sight again [to make sure]: Can you see any rifts [in the heavens]? [No, of course!] Then turn your [eye-] sight twice [to the gaseous heavens!] –your [eye -] sight shall return to you disappointed eventhough it be open-eyed.)

Therefore, the "stratified heavens" (seven in number) means the gaseous layers. And as such will the gaseous heavens be mentioned in the Quran. This is so if it is mentioned in plural, but if it is mentioned in singular, i.e. sky or heaven, then it means the gaseous heavens or the space, whether or not it is mentioned together with the "earth." And it makes no difference whether it is mentioned before the "earth" or after it; for in both cases it means the gaseous heavens, but it must be in singular.

An example of that is His saying –be exalted –in the Quran, 21: 104

﴿ يَوْمَ نَطْوِى ٱلسَّمَآءَ كَطَىِّ ٱلسِّجِلِّ لِلْكُتُبِ ﴾

The explanation: (The day when We shall roll up the heaven as the "sijill" [or the leather bucket used as a folder] rolls up the books [and mix them with each other] …etc.) The "heaven", here, means the gaseous layers.

God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 10: 31

﴿ قُلْ مَن يَرْزُقُكُم مِّنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ وَٱلْأَرْضِ ﴾

The explanation: (Say [O Mohammed], "Who provides you out of heaven and earth ?)

God said –be exalted –in the Quran, 40: 64

﴿ ٱللَّهُ ٱلَّذِى جَعَلَ لَكُمُ ٱلْأَرْضَ قَرَارًا وَٱلسَّمَآءَ بِنَآءً ﴾

The explanation: (It is God Who has made for you the earth for a dwelling- place, and the sky (or heaven) for a structure [of gaseous layers one above another.])

Therefore, the "heaven" or "sky", here, means the firmament or the gaseous heavens.

One may ask: We know that the air is a mixture of many

gases like the oxygen and the nitrogen, the why don't these gases separate from each other, so that it also be in layers?

To answer this question we say: That is because of winds, which move these gases and mix them with each other. And suppose no wind is present, and then these gases will start to separate from each other and form layers. But, actually, the gaseous layers are above the oxygen or, more precisely, above the air, and no wind is present there to move these gases and mix them with each other.

[**N.B:** The atmosphere includes the air and the gaseous layers or heavens; the gaseous heavens lie above the air and above the region of the cloud, which lies between the air and the gaseous layers or heavens; see the following lines –the translator.]

An example of that is the water: the running water will be crude and turbid, while the stagnant water will be clear.

God –be exalted –says in the Quran, 2: 164

﴿ وَتَصۡرِيفِ ٱلرِّيَٰحِ وَٱلسَّحَابِ ٱلۡمُسَخَّرِ بَيۡنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ وَٱلۡأَرۡضِ لَأٓيَٰتٖ لِّقَوۡمٖ يَعۡقِلُونَ ١٦٤ ﴾

The explanation: (And in the changing of winds, and in clouds that are subjected [into His service] between the sky [or heaven] and the earth, are signs to people who have sense.)

Here, God –be exalted –explained that the cloud is between the sky and the earth. So, the position of the sky is from the cloud up, while the position of the air is from the cloud down. Therefore, the wind belongs or related to the earth and not to the sky.

(2) The Ethereal Heavens [The Kingdom of Heavens]

[**"For I tell you, that unless your justice abound more than that of the scribes and Pharisees, you shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven."** [The Holy Gospel according to St. Matthew, chapter 5: 20]

The ethereal heavens are also seven, but on Doomsday they

will become eight, and even they are in continuous increase; that is because when every earth is formed, there will form within it a spiritual earth, and when the material earth will be destroyed (when its Doomsday is due), that spiritual (or ethereal) layer will detach from the material one and will follow those seven ethereal layers.

We should also know that the formation of these layers was not at the same time, but they were formed from the successive destruction of seven systems. That is because each one of those seven spiritual heavens was the result of a complete solar system. Therefore, on Doomsday, they will become eight ethereal heavens.

God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 69: 17

﴿ وَيَحۡمِلُ عَرۡشَ رَبِّكَ فَوۡقَهُمۡ يَوۡمَئِذٖ ثَمَٰنِيَةٞ ١٧ ﴾

The explanation: (And above them[1] on that day[2], shall eight [ethereal heavens] bear the throne of your Lord.)

The explanation: Eight ethereal heavens will bear the Throne, on the Day of Doom; while today it is borne by seven ethereal heavens only.

While we are speaking about the ethereal heavens, we have to define the ether; so what is the ether?

The Ether

Contemporary scientists have recognized the ether; they said that it fills the space, and that, without this ether, it is impossible for the planets to revolve in their orbits, but instead they will fall down even though there is the power of the gravitation; because the ether is the carrier of these celestial objects.

God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 36: 40

﴿ وَكُلّٞ فِي فَلَكٖ يَسۡبَحُونَ ٤٠ ﴾

---

(1) i.e. above those who are in the "gathering-together" for Judgment.
(2) i.e. the Day of Doom, or Doomsday.

gases like the oxygen and the nitrogen, the why don't these gases separate from each other, so that it also be in layers?

To answer this question we say: That is because of winds, which move these gases and mix them with each other. And suppose no wind is present, and then these gases will start to separate from each other and form layers. But, actually, the gaseous layers are above the oxygen or, more precisely, above the air, and no wind is present there to move these gases and mix them with each other.

[**N.B:** The atmosphere includes the air and the gaseous layers or heavens; the gaseous heavens lie above the air and above the region of the cloud, which lies between the air and the gaseous layers or heavens; see the following lines –the translator.]

An example of that is the water: the running water will be crude and turbid, while the stagnant water will be clear.

God –be exalted –says in the Quran, 2: 164

﴿ وَتَصۡرِيفِ ٱلرِّيَٰحِ وَٱلسَّحَابِ ٱلۡمُسَخَّرِ بَيۡنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ وَٱلۡأَرۡضِ لَأٓيَٰتٖ لِّقَوۡمٖ يَعۡقِلُونَ ١٦٤ ﴾

The explanation: (And in the changing of winds, and in clouds that are subjected [into His service] between the sky [or heaven] and the earth, are signs to people who have sense.)

Here, God –be exalted –explained that the cloud is between the sky and the earth. So, the position of the sky is from the cloud up, while the position of the air is from the cloud down. Therefore, the wind belongs or related to the earth and not to the sky.

(2) The Ethereal Heavens [The Kingdom of Heavens]

[**"For I tell you, that unless your justice abound more than that of the scribes and Pharisees, you shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven."** [The Holy Gospel according to St. Matthew, chapter 5: 20]

The ethereal heavens are also seven, but on Doomsday they

will become eight, and even they are in continuous increase; that is because when every earth is formed, there will form within it a spiritual earth, and when the material earth will be destroyed (when its Doomsday is due), that spiritual (or ethereal) layer will detach from the material one and will follow those seven ethereal layers.

We should also know that the formation of these layers was not at the same time, but they were formed from the successive destruction of seven systems. That is because each one of those seven spiritual heavens was the result of a complete solar system. Therefore, on Doomsday, they will become eight ethereal heavens.

God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 69: 17

﴿ وَيَحۡمِلُ عَرۡشَ رَبِّكَ فَوۡقَهُمۡ يَوۡمَئِذٖ ثَمَٰنِيَةٞ ١٧ ﴾

The explanation: (And above them[1] on that day[2], shall eight [ethereal heavens] bear the throne of your Lord.)

The explanation: Eight ethereal heavens will bear the Throne, on the Day of Doom; while today it is borne by seven ethereal heavens only.

While we are speaking about the ethereal heavens, we have to define the ether; so what is the ether?

The Ether

Contemporary scientists have recognized the ether; they said that it fills the space, and that, without this ether, it is impossible for the planets to revolve in their orbits, but instead they will fall down even though there is the power of the gravitation; because the ether is the carrier of these celestial objects.

God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 36: 40

﴿ وَكُلّٞ فِي فَلَكٖ يَسۡبَحُونَ ٤٠ ﴾

---

(1) i.e. above those who are in the "gathering-together" for Judgment.
(2) i.e. the Day of Doom, or Doomsday.

The explanation: (But each [of the sun, moon and earth] is swimming along into a [specific] orbit.)

Of course, swimming cannot take place except in a liquid medium or what is similar to liquid such as air and gas, ...etc. So all the celestial objects swim in the ether. This ether is very transparent like the air; its particles are far more smaller and finer than those of the air; and for this reason, it cannot be seen by material creatures; moreover, it cannot be touched or perceived. But it is possible only for spiritual creatures (: angels, genies or demons and human souls) to see, touch and perceive the ether.

The ether fills every space, and goes through material objects in the intermolecular spaces. It goes through the cup and constructs an ethereal skeleton inside it, similar exactly to its shape, in a period of forty days, and when the material skeleton breaks up, the ethereal will not, and will never be destroyed afterwards; because its particles have been cohered or attached firmly to each other during this period, and will never separate afterwards. E.g. the ethereal particles will go through a porcelain pot, and will form an ethereal skeleton inside it according to its shape. In this respect, there is no difference between the porcelain or the copper pot, and no difference between pots, utensils, jewels, trees, plants and other material objects; because every material object has much many intervening spaces inside it. Therefore, the ether will enter in those spaces, and build a frame similar to its shape.

God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 18: 31

﴿ أُولَٰٓئِكَ لَهُمْ جَنَّٰتُ عَدْنٍ تَجْرِى مِن تَحْتِهِمُ ٱلْأَنْهَٰرُ يُحَلَّوْنَ فِيهَا مِنْ أَسَاوِرَ مِن ذَهَبٍ وَيَلْبَسُونَ ثِيَابًا خُضْرًا مِّن سُندُسٍ وَإِسْتَبْرَقٍ ﴾

The explanation: (Those [believers] will have Seven Gardens [in the neighborhood of their Lord]; rivers will flow

beneath them[1]; therein they will be adorned with [bracelets issuing] from bracelets of gold, and will wear green garments [issuing] from fine silk, and from silk brocade …etc.)

The interpretation:

- (With [bracelets issuing] from bracelets of gold) means: the ethereal bracelets, which had [in the life of the World] been formed inside the gold bracelets.

If He –be exalted – had meant by that the same gold bracelets, then He would have said: adorned with gold bracelets.

- (And will wear green garments [issuing] from fine silk) means: the ethereal garments that issued from the silky garments.

God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 22: 23

﴿ إِنَّ ٱللَّهَ يُدْخِلُ ٱلَّذِينَ ءَامَنُوا۟ وَعَمِلُوا۟ ٱلصَّٰلِحَٰتِ جَنَّٰتٍ تَجْرِى مِن تَحْتِهَا ٱلْأَنْهَٰرُ يُحَلَّوْنَ فِيهَا مِنْ أَسَاوِرَ مِن ذَهَبٍ وَلُؤْلُؤًا ۖ وَلِبَاسُهُمْ فِيهَا حَرِيرٌ ﴾

The explanation: (God will admit those who believe and work righteous deeds to Gardens under which [trees][2] rivers flow; they shall be adorned therein with bracelets of gold and pearls; and their garments there will be of silk.)

Also, God- be exalted- said in the Quran, 56: 51-52 about the dispraise of disbelievers:

﴿ ثُمَّ إِنَّكُمْ أَيُّهَا ٱلضَّآلُّونَ ٱلْمُكَذِّبُونَ لَءَاكِلُونَ مِن شَجَرٍ مِّن زَقُّومٍ ﴾

The explanation: (51- ' Then, you: the erring, the deniers!' 52- ' you will surely eat of [ethereal] trees from the Zaqqum [: a kind of thorn – trees.]')

---

(1) i.e. beneath the trees of the Garden.

(2) i.e. under or below the trees of the Garden.

It means: of ethereal trees that issued from the Zaqqum trees of this material World; the Zaqqum is some kind of thorn.

However, if you know that every ethereal heaven had issued from a solar system, then will also know that there were seven solar systems that had preceded our solar system, and this last is the eighth one. You will also know that eight suns had preceded our sun, and this last is the ninth; for every sun will change into an earth after its death.

In the Quran, the spiritual (ethereal) heavens are mentioned in two ways:

a- One time it is mentioned before mentioning the 'earth', and here there should be no 'and' between the words 'heavens' and the 'earth'.

b- And another time, it will be mentioned alone without mentioning the 'earth' with it.

An example of that is His saying – be exalted- in the Quran, 17: 44

﴿ تُسَبِّحُ لَهُ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتُ ٱلسَّبۡعُ وَٱلۡأَرۡضُ وَمَن فِيهِنَّۚ وَإِن مِّن شَيۡءٍ إِلَّا يُسَبِّحُ بِحَمۡدِهِۦ ﴾

The explanation: (The seven heavens and the earth and al that is therein praise Him; and there is not a thing but hymns His praise)

Hence, the 'heavens' here means the ethereal layers; because they are mentioned before mentioning the earth and there is no 'and' between the two words.[In this Quranic revelation, the word سبع i.e. seven in Arabic is intervening between the 'heavens' and the 'earth'.]

God –be exalted- said in the Quran, 23: 86

﴿ قُلۡ مَن رَّبُّ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ ٱلسَّبۡعِ وَرَبُّ ٱلۡعَرۡشِ ٱلۡعَظِيمِ ﴿٨٦﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (Say, 'Who is the Lord of the seven heavens, and the Lord of the Throne [of Glory] Supreme?')

The 'heavens' here means the ethereal layers; for God –be exalted – has not mentioned them together with the earth, but mentioned them together with the throne; because the throne [of the Lord] is over the ethereal heavens.

God –be exalted - said in the Quran, 53: 26

﴿ وَكَم مِّن مَّلَكٖ فِي ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ لَا تُغۡنِي شَفَٰعَتُهُمۡ شَيۡـٔٗا إِلَّا مِنۢ بَعۡدِ أَن يَأۡذَنَ ٱللَّهُ لِمَن يَشَآءُ وَيَرۡضَىٰٓ ﴿٢٦﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And how many angels are in the heavens whose intercession avails naught save after God has given permission to whomsoever He wills and is pleased with!)

The heavens here means the ethereal layers; for the earth is not mentioned with them, but the angels are mentioned; so that He –be exalted –explained that these heavens are inhabited by the angels.

And in the Quran, 65: 12 God –be highly exalted –said:

﴿ ٱللَّهُ ٱلَّذِي خَلَقَ سَبۡعَ سَمَٰوَٰتٖ وَمِنَ ٱلۡأَرۡضِ مِثۡلَهُنَّۖ يَتَنَزَّلُ ٱلۡأَمۡرُ بَيۡنَهُنَّ ﴾

The explanation: (God [is He] Who created seven [ancient ethereal] heavens, and the equal [number of gaseous heavens He –then –created, out] of the earth; the Am'r [: the angels] come down among them [with the revelation to prophets.])

The 'heavens' here means the ethereal layers; because it is mentioned before mentioning the 'earth', and there is no 'and' between them.

The Am'r : This word is the noun given to each kind of the spiritual creatures, like the angels and the human beings.

The interpretation of this Quranic revelation: It is God Who created seven ethereal heavens in the ancient time, then He created the earth, and from the earth He created seven gaseous heavens; for God had created the ethereal heavens before had He created the earth by millions of years as we have just explained.

It is mentioned in the Psalms (Psalm 67: a psalm of canticle for David himself –Douay version – 33-34)

"Sing to God, O kingdoms of the earth: sing praise to the Lord. Sing to God who mounted above the heaven of heavens."

The word 'heavens' here means the ethereal layers, and the 'heaven of heavens' means the throne because the throne is over the ethereal heavens.

As regards His saying –be celebrated His praise – يتنزّلُ الأمرُ بينَهنَّ i.e. (T he Am'r [: the angels come down among them [with the revelation to prophets]) The Am'r is an indication of spiritual creatures.

The interpretation: The spiritual creatures descend between the ethereal and gaseous layers. The spiritual creatures are: angels, genies (or demons) and human souls (or spirits.) We shall explain about them in our book ' Man After Death.'

The ethereal heavens –actually –are the Paradise in which good souls dwell on the Day of Judgment, while today they are the dwelling place of angels.

However, the ethereal heavens bear the throne above them; they are called the 'Chair' in the Quranic revelations where He said –be exalted – 2: 255

﴿ وَسِعَ كُرْسِيُّهُ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضَ ﴾

The explanation: ([The extent of] His " chair" equals [the vast extent of] the heavens and the earth [: the terrestrial planets and the earth.])

Moreover, Jesus - peace be on him –said to his disciples, as it is mentioned in the Holy Gospel according to St. Matthew, chapter 5: 20

"For I tell you, that unless your justice abound more than that of the scribes and Pharisees, you shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven."

It means: You shall not enter into Paradise, i.e. the ethereal heavens. The position of the ethereal heavens is in the space, where those dwelling therein see neither sun nor moon.

We have here mentioned something about the ethereal layers, and we shall mention more about them when we shall tell about 'Paradise' in our second book "Man After Death"; and God is the Guide to the truth and righteousness.

The Throne
[The Heaven of Heavens]

[**"Sing to God, O kingdoms of the earth: sing praise to the Lord. Sing to God Who mounted above the heaven of heavens."** [(Psalm 67: a psalm of canticle for David himself – Douay Version – 33-34)]

The throne, too, is an ethereal layer, and its position is above the paradises i.e. the ethereal heavens; for the heavens are the carriers of the throne, and it is smaller than them. E.g. God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 69: 17

﴿ وَيَحْمِلُ عَرْشَ رَبِّكَ فَوْقَهُمْ يَوْمَئِذٍ ثَمَٰنِيَةٌ ﴿١٧﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And above them on that Day [of Judgment], will eight [ethereal heavens] bear the throne of your Lord.)

It means: The throne of your Lord will be borne above people on Judgment Day, by eight ethereal heavens; because today they are seven, but on Doomsday they will become eight, and the eighth will issue from our present solar system.

God –be exalted –also said in the Quran, 40: 7

﴿ ٱلَّذِينَ يَحْمِلُونَ ٱلْعَرْشَ وَمَنْ حَوْلَهُۥ يُسَبِّحُونَ بِحَمْدِ رَبِّهِمْ وَيُؤْمِنُونَ بِهِۦ وَيَسْتَغْفِرُونَ لِلَّذِينَ ءَامَنُوا ﴾

The explanation: (Those [angels in the ethereal heavens] who bear the throne [of the Lord] and those [angels] around it celebrate the praises to their Lord, believe in Him [: God], and

implore [God] for forgiveness to those who believe ...etc.)

'Those who bear the throne' are the angels. This does not mean that they really bear it, but they bear it only because it is above them, just as are we bearing the sky or the gaseous layers because they are above us. Likewise, the inhabitants of the ethereal heavens are bearing the throne because it is above them.

This means that the angels who are under the throne and those angels who are around the throne, all of them celebrate the praise of their Lord …etc.

His saying –be exalted – و مَنْ حوله i.e. (and those [angels] around it) is an indication that the throne is smaller than the ethereal heavens.

God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 39: 75

﴿وَتَرَى ٱلْمَلَٰٓئِكَةَ حَآفِّينَ مِنْ حَوْلِ ٱلْعَرْشِ يُسَبِّحُونَ بِحَمْدِ رَبِّهِمْ وَقُضِىَ بَيْنَهُم بِٱلْحَقِّ وَقِيلَ ٱلْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ رَبِّ ٱلْعَٰلَمِينَ ﴿٧٥﴾﴾

The explanation: (And you [Mohammed, after entering into Paradise] will see the angels thronging round about the Throne, hymning the praises of their Lord. And [people] will be judged aright. And it will be said [by the people of Paradise]: Praise be to God, the Lord of the worlds!)

Therefore, (thronging round about the throne) indicates that the throne is smaller than the ethereal heavens.

The throne, therefore, is the first ethereal layer formed from the first earth, created by God –be exalted. At that ancient time, there was nothing under the throne except water vapor (which is called as water in the Quranic revelation 11: 7; see below), and when God created a second earth, a second layer issued from it, which came to lie under the throne, and so on the third and fourth until they became seven ethereal layers (heavens) under the throne. God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 23: 86

﴿قُلْ مَن رَّبُّ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ ٱلسَّبْعِ وَرَبُّ ٱلْعَرْشِ ٱلْعَظِيمِ ﴿٨٦﴾﴾

The explanation: (Say [O Mohammed, to the idolaters],

"Who is the Lord[1] of the seven heavens, and the Lord of the Throne [of Glory] Supreme?)

Question: You say that the Throne is an ethereal layer, then what is the meaning of the Quranic revelation 11: 7

﴿وَهُوَ ٱلَّذِى خَلَقَ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضَ فِى سِتَّةِ أَيَّامٍ وَكَانَ عَرْشُهُۥ عَلَى ٱلْمَآءِ﴾

The explanation: (It is [God] Who created the heavens and the earth in six days [: six thousand years], and His throne had been upon the water [vapor])?

Answer: The meaning of this is that before had He created the creation, His throne was upon the water, i.e. the water vapor in the space; for at that time there were no ethereal heavens, and when He created them gradually one by one, He let His throne to be borne over the ethereal heavens. The water was in the form of vapor scattered in the space, a situation like what happens today to the rain; because water evaporates from the earth and goes up in the sky then becomes water and descends as rain.

Hence, the Throne at that time was above the scattered water vapor in the space, and when God created the ethereal heavens they became under the Throne, i.e. they bore the Throne above them.

---

(1) 'Lord' means: possessor or owner.

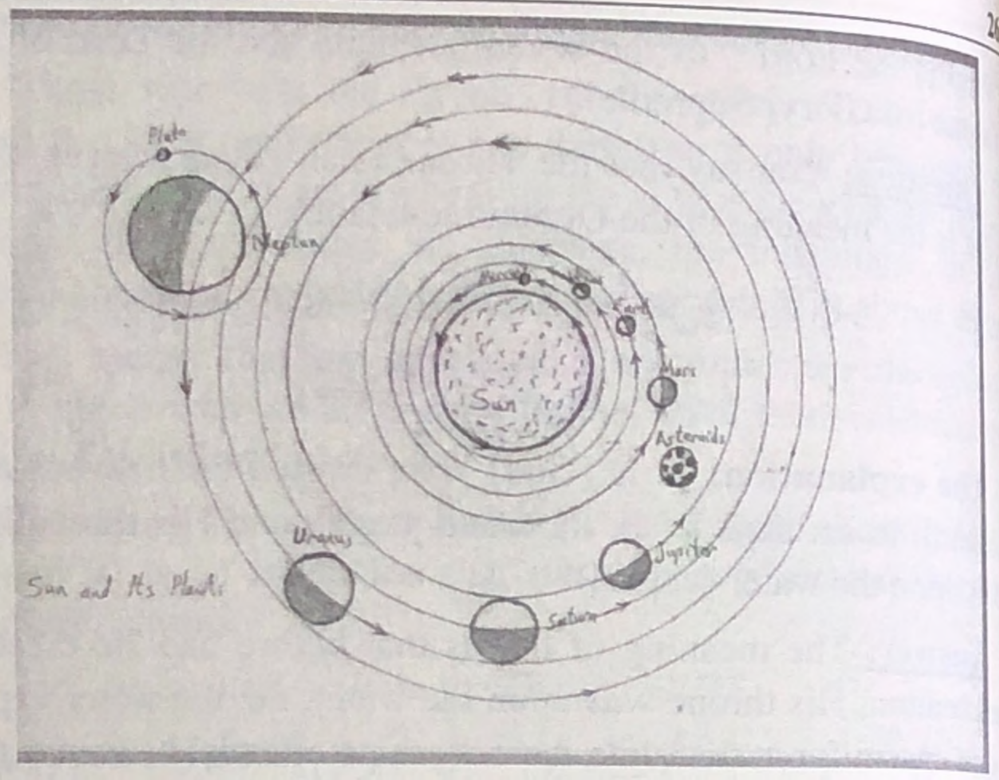


Diagram **1** of the Sun and its planets

[Showing: - the planets are arranged away from the Sun, according to their sizes: the smallest is the nearest, and the biggest is the farthest.

- Sun rotates from right to left and drags all the planets making them rotate and revolve in the same direction: from right to left. The planets drag the moons and satellites to revolve around the planets from right to left; i.e. all the solar system move in this same direction.
- The Asteroids occupy the orbit between Mars and Jupiter: some revolve around Mars and some around Jupiter; but they do not revolve around the Sun.
- Pluto, being a satellite of Jupiter but not a planet, revolves around Neptune, but not around the Sun – an explanation by the translator.]

(3) The Material Heavens [: the Planets]

We mean by the 'material heavens': the planets or the 'wandering stars'. However, we call them by this name (the material heavens); because we have just mentioned about the ethereal heavens, and the ether is different from the matter; and because we have just mentioned about the gaseous heavens, and the planets are not gaseous, but they are solid objects, and for

this reason we mention it by the word (material) even though both are of matter.

The material heavens are those known as: Mercury, Venus, Mars, Jupiter and the rest. They are nine in number; in the Quran, they are mentioned together with the earth, so every Quranic revelation in which the 'heavens' are mentioned together with the 'earth' it means the planets, but on three conditions:

First –The 'heavens' must be mentioned together with the 'earth'.

Second –The 'heavens' must be mentioned together with the 'earth' directly.

Third –There must be the word 'and' between 'the heavens' and 'the earth'

So, if any Quranic revelation fulfils all these three conditions, then God –be exalted –means the planets.

(1) E.g. God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 46: 3

﴿ مَا خَلَقْنَا ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضَ وَمَا بَيْنَهُمَآ إِلَّا بِٱلْحَقِّ وَأَجَلٍ مُّسَمًّى ﴾

The explanation: (We created not the heavens and the earth and [all] that is between them save with the true [promise of destruction], and for a destined end.)

This Quranic revelation fulfils all the three conditions; hence the 'heavens' here means the planets; and actually He mentioned the earth in particular, and gathered the rest of the planets by the word 'heavens' because the address is to the people of Earth. Suppose that God –be exalted –addresses the people of Mars, then He will say: We created not the heavens and Mars save with the true [promise.]

Similarly, if He addresses the people of Venus, then He will say: We created not the heavens and Venus saves with the true [promise.]

As regards His saying و ما بينهما i.e. (and [all] that is between them); it means: the moons and meteorites because they are

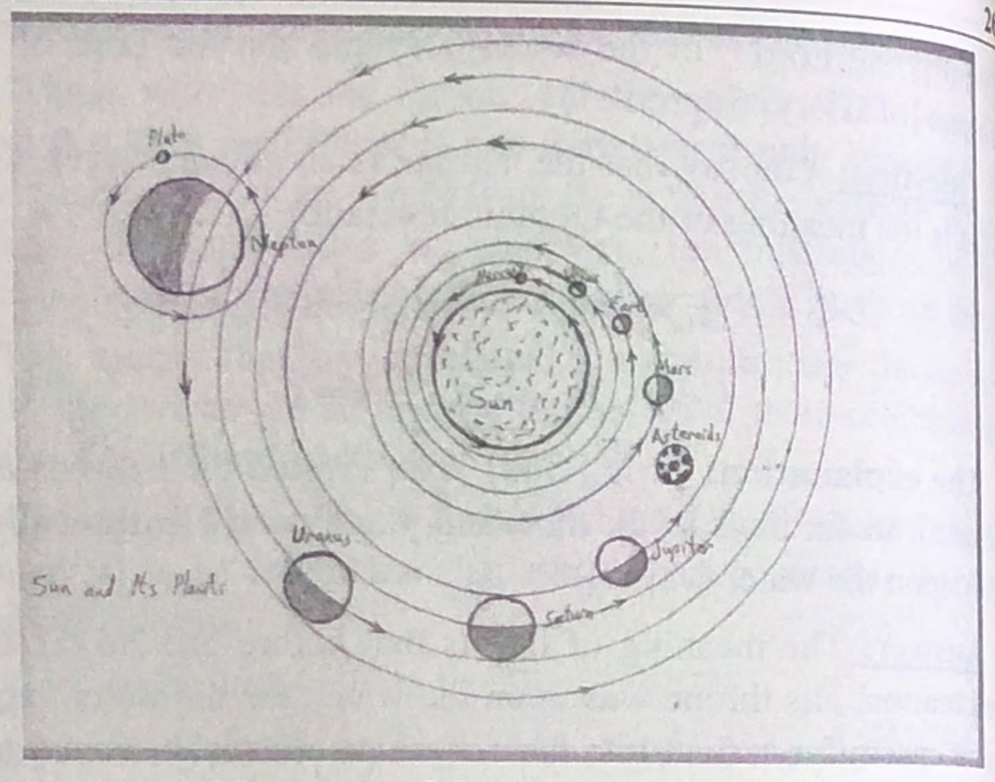


Diagram **1** of the Sun and its planets

[Showing: - the planets are arranged away from the Sun, according to their sizes: the smallest is the nearest, and the biggest is the farthest.

- Sun rotates from right to left and drags all the planets making them rotate and revolve in the same direction: from right to left. The planets drag the moons and satellites to revolve around the planets from right to left; i.e. all the solar system move in this same direction.
- The Asteroids occupy the orbit between Mars and Jupiter: some revolve around Mars and some around Jupiter; but they do not revolve around the Sun.
- Pluto, being a satellite of Jupiter but not a planet, revolves around Neptune, but not around the Sun – an explanation by the translator.]

(3) The Material Heavens [: the Planets]

We mean by the 'material heavens': the planets or the 'wandering stars'. However, we call them by this name (the material heavens); because we have just mentioned about the ethereal heavens, and the ether is different from the matter; and because we have just mentioned about the gaseous heavens, and the planets are not gaseous, but they are solid objects, and for

this reason we mention it by the word (material) even though both are of matter.

The material heavens are those known as: Mercury, Venus, Mars, Jupiter and the rest. They are nine in number; in the Quran, they are mentioned together with the earth, so every Quranic revelation in which the 'heavens' are mentioned together with the 'earth' it means the planets, but on three conditions:

First –The 'heavens' must be mentioned together with the 'earth'.

Second –The 'heavens' must be mentioned together with the 'earth' directly.

Third –There must be the word 'and' between 'the heavens' and 'the earth'

So, if any Quranic revelation fulfils all these three conditions, then God –be exalted –means the planets.

(1) E.g. God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 46: 3

﴿ مَا خَلَقْنَا ٱلسَّمَـٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضَ وَمَا بَيْنَهُمَآ إِلَّا بِٱلْحَقِّ وَأَجَلٍ مُّسَمًّى ﴾

The explanation: (We created not the heavens and the earth and [all] that is between them save with the true [promise of destruction], and for a destined end.)

This Quranic revelation fulfils all the three conditions; hence the 'heavens' here means the planets; and actually He mentioned the earth in particular, and gathered the rest of the planets by the word 'heavens' because the address is to the people of Earth. Suppose that God –be exalted –addresses the people of Mars, then He will say: We created not the heavens and Mars save with the true [promise.]

Similarly, if He addresses the people of Venus, then He will say: We created not the heavens and Venus saves with the true [promise.]

As regards His saying و ما بينهما i.e. (and [all] that is between them); it means: the moons and meteorites because they are

situated between the planets.

So every Quranic revelation, in which the 'heavens' are mentioned in this way, means the planets.

(1) God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 21: 19

﴿ وَلَهُۥ مَن فِي ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضِ ۚ وَمَنْ عِندَهُۥ لَا يَسْتَكْبِرُونَ عَنْ عِبَادَتِهِۦ وَلَا يَسْتَحْسِرُونَ ﴿١٩﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (All those who are in the heavens and the earth belong to Him. And those [angels] who are in His [neighborhood] are not too proud to serve Him, nor do they regret [for the passing of time.])

So the 'heavens', here, means the planets as it is indicated from His saying:

﴿ وَمَنْ عِندَهُۥ لَا يَسْتَكْبِرُونَ عَنْ عِبَادَتِهِۦ ﴾

i.e. (And those [angels] who are in His [neighborhood] are not too proud to serve Him); so He differentiated between 'those who are in His [neighborhood]' from 'those who are in the heavens and the earth'. He means, by His saying:

(ومَنْ عندَهُ) i.e. (Those who are in His [neighborhood]), the angels because they are in the ethereal heavens under the throne.

(2) And God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 42: 29

﴿ وَمِنْ ءَايَٰتِهِۦ خَلْقُ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضِ وَمَا بَثَّ فِيهِمَا مِن دَآبَّةٍ ۚ وَهُوَ عَلَىٰ جَمْعِهِمْ إِذَا يَشَآءُ قَدِيرٌ ﴿٢٩﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And of His signs is the creation of the heavens and the earth and what He has spread therein of beasts [: moving creatures]; and He is All- Able to gather them if He wills.)

The 'heavens', here, means the planets as it is indicated from His saying –be exalted –

(و ما بَثَّ فيهما مِنْ دابّة) i.e. (And what He has spread abroad therein of beasts [: moving creatures]); for there is no moving

creatures or beasts in the ethereal heavens. Likewise, in the gaseous heavens there are no moving creatures or beasts, but moving creatures or beasts are in the material heavens, which are the planets.

(3) God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 27: 60

﴿ أَمَّنْ خَلَقَ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضَ وَأَنزَلَ لَكُم مِّنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ مَآءً فَأَنۢبَتْنَا بِهِۦ حَدَآئِقَ ذَاتَ بَهْجَةٍ ﴾

The explanation: ([Is that, which they associate with God, better] or is He Who created the heavens and the earth, and send down for you [rain] water from the sky; wherewith We cause to grow delightful orchards …etc.)

So the heavens, here, means the planets, and the indication of that is His saying –be exalted –

﴿وَأَنزَلَ لَكُم مِّنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ مَآءً﴾

i.e. (and send down for you [rain] water from the sky), and by this He explained that the 'sky' is different from the 'heavens' because He separated between the word 'sky' and the word 'heavens'. He means by the word سماء i.e. the 'sky' the space or the gaseous layers.

While the 'heavens' means the planets because He has mentioned it together with the 'earth', and the meaning is: the heavens, which are of the same kind as the Earth.

(4) The Lord God said, also, in the Quran, 27: 65

﴿ قُل لَّا يَعْلَمُ مَن فِي ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضِ ٱلْغَيْبَ إِلَّا ٱللَّهُ ۚ وَمَا يَشْعُرُونَ أَيَّانَ يُبْعَثُونَ ﴿٦٥﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (Say [O Mohammed]: "None in the heavens and the earth knows the fore- future except God; and they perceive not when they shall be sent forth [from their bodies to the Hereafter.])

The 'heavens' here means the terrestrial planets; the indication of that is His saying –be exalted-

﴿ وَمَا يَشْعُرُونَ أَيَّانَ يُبْعَثُونَ ﴿٢١﴾ ﴾

i.e. (and they perceive not when they shall be sent [from their bodies to the Hereafter]); because angels do not die and will not be raised or sent [from their bodies to the Hereafter, or from the earth to the congregation or gathering-together in the space on the Day of Judgment]; because they are ethereal, but the raising and the sending and gathering-together are for the mortals who inhabit the planets.

Till here, we finished talking about the sky and heaven; and God is the Praiseworthy and the Supporting Master.

Note: Every Quranic revelation, in which the earth is mentioned before the heavens, means the earths: all of them, i.e. all the planets, e.g.

(1) God –be exalted –says in the Quran, 39: 67

﴿ وَمَا قَدَرُوا۟ ٱللَّهَ حَقَّ قَدْرِهِۦ وَٱلْأَرْضُ جَمِيعًا قَبْضَتُهُۥ يَوْمَ ٱلْقِيَٰمَةِ وَٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتُ مَطْوِيَّٰتٌۢ بِيَمِينِهِۦ ﴾

The explanation: (And they do not esteem God as He should be esteemed, while the earth, all, will be [but] His handful on the Doomsday, and the heavens will be rolled up by His right hand!)

So the 'earth', here, means all of them, i.e. the planets as a whole.

(2) Similar to this Quranic revelation is another one where God –be exalted –says in the Quran, 3: 5

﴿ إِنَّ ٱللَّهَ لَا يَخْفَىٰ عَلَيْهِ شَىْءٌ فِى ٱلْأَرْضِ وَلَا فِى ٱلسَّمَآءِ ﴿٥﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (From God, nothing is hidden in the earth, nor in the heaven)

The 'earth', here, means all of them, i.e. all the parts of the earth which had broken up or torn up into many pieces; they are the planets; because they were one earth, and it were broken up into many planets.

Definition:

Every word 'planet', mentioned in the Quran, means one of the planets of the solar system, and nothing else, like

(1) His saying –be exalted –in the Quran, 6: 76

﴿ فَلَمَّا جَنَّ عَلَيْهِ ٱلَّيْلُ رَءَا كَوْكَبًا قَالَ هَٰذَا رَبِّى فَلَمَّآ أَفَلَ قَالَ لَآ أُحِبُّ ٱلْءَافِلِينَ ﴿٧٦﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And when the night outspread over him, he saw a planet [: Venus]; he said: 'This is my Lord'. But when it set, he said: 'I love not the setters'.)

The planet, here, means Venus, which Abraham saw at night.

(2) Moreover, God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 12: 4

﴿ إِذْ قَالَ يُوسُفُ لِأَبِيهِ يَٰٓأَبَتِ إِنِّى رَأَيْتُ أَحَدَ عَشَرَ كَوْكَبًا وَٱلشَّمْسَ وَٱلْقَمَرَ رَأَيْتُهُمْ لِى سَٰجِدِينَ ﴿٤﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (When Joseph said to his father: 'Father, I saw [in a dream] eleven planets and the sun and the moon; I saw them prostrating themselves before me.')

The 'planets' means the terrestrial planets, but he saw them eleven because his brothers were eleven.

(3) God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 82: 2

﴿ وَإِذَا ٱلْكَوَاكِبُ ٱنتَثَرَتْ ﴿٢﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And when the [terrestrial] planets [shall break up into pieces that] shall be strewn about [in the space to be as meteorites.])

The 'planets' particularly means, here, the planets of the solar system, and the interpretation is: When the planets shall be broken up and their parts shall be dispersed in the space, and that will take place on Doomsday.

{A Conversation with the Author}

Question 1: You say that the 'sky' means the space, then what is the meaning of His saying –be exalted –in the Quran, 40: 64

﴿ ٱللَّهُ ٱلَّذِى جَعَلَ لَكُمُ ٱلْأَرْضَ قَرَارًا وَٱلسَّمَآءَ بِنَآءً وَصَوَّرَكُمْ ﴾

The explanation: (God is He Who has made for you the earth for a dwelling-place, and the sky for a structure [of gaseous layers,] and shaped you in fine shapes,)

And His saying– be exalted – in the Quran, 51: 47

﴿ وَٱلسَّمَآءَ بَنَيْنَٰهَا بِأَيْيْدٍ وَإِنَّا لَمُوسِعُونَ ﴿٤٧﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And the sky – We have built with surplus [from Us], and We are Open-handed more.)

The interpretation: God says that He has constructed the sky with His surplus; because He is Merciful to people, and He is still more Open-handed; because He is Generous.

Answer: 'To build' means to collect the object and to compact its parts to each other. They say: The builder builds the wall, i.e. he collects the bricks and attaches them to each other by matrix. And the 'sky' means the gaseous layers.

The meaning of this Quranic revelation: And the gases, We have collected and packed, with Our surplus towards them and Our mercy to them; for if We let these gases at the surface of the earth, then their life will be impossible, but they will rather suffocate and die. Therefore, We have lifted these gases by Our mercy, and packed them in layers by Our surplus, so We have made the oxygen and nitrogen in the air for many other benefits; nevertheless, We have lifted the suffocating and harmful gases by Our mercy and surplus, and We are still more Open-handed with profuse favors and grace of God; as He says – be exalted – in the Quran, 14: 34

﴿ وَإِن تَعُدُّوا۟ نِعْمَتَ ٱللَّهِ لَا تُحْصُوهَآ ﴾

The explanation: (And if you would count the bounty of God, you cannot count it.)

Question 2: What is the meaning of His saying –be exalted –in the Quran, 31: 10

﴿ خَلَقَ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ بِغَيْرِ عَمَدٍ تَرَوْنَهَا ﴾

The explanation: (He created the [gaseous] heavens without pillars you can see)?

Answer: When the Arabs want to erect their tents, which are made of goat hair, they lay the pillars down on the earth, and put the tents over them and tie the ropes and fix them to the ground, then they pull the ropes from the other side, so that the pillars will stand up and the tent will be raised with them.

This is a parable from God – be highly exalted – and its explanation: Your tents, even though they are small in size and low in height, cannot be erected without pillars; whereas the sky, even though it is very wide and high, He has lifted it without pillars; He created it with His wisdom, and lifted it with His unlimited ability, and He is not in need of any assistant to do all that.

Question 3: What is the meaning of His saying –be exalted – in the Quran, 22: 65

﴿ أَلَمْ تَرَ أَنَّ ٱللَّهَ سَخَّرَ لَكُم مَّا فِى ٱلْأَرْضِ وَٱلْفُلْكَ تَجْرِى فِى ٱلْبَحْرِ بِأَمْرِهِۦ
وَيُمْسِكُ ٱلسَّمَآءَ أَن تَقَعَ عَلَى ٱلْأَرْضِ إِلَّا بِإِذْنِهِۦٓ
إِنَّ ٱللَّهَ بِٱلنَّاسِ لَرَءُوفٌ رَّحِيمٌ ﴿٦٥﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (Have you [Mohammed] not seen how God has made all that is in the earth subjected to you [people,] and the ship run on the see with His decree, and He holds back the sky from falling down upon the earth save with His leave[1]; surely, God is All-Compassionate [and] Most Merciful to people.)?

---

(1) As will it do on the Last Day, just before Doomsday.

Answer: The 'sky', here, means the gaseous layers.

The explanation: God –be exalted –holds back the gaseous layers and prevents them from falling down on the earth, and if this occurs then all people will die and perish because these gases are suffocating and harmful to the health of people. The proof of this is His saying –be exalted –(إنَّ اللهَ بالناسِ لَرَؤوفٌ رحيمٌ) i.e. (Surely, God is All-Compassionate [and] Most Merciful to people.)

So the explanation of this Quranic revelation: is that God with His mercy made these suffocating and poisonous gases light in weight in order to rise up in the sky so that they would not do harm, until before Doomsday; because at that time they will come down to the ground. This is understood from His saying –be exalted – (إلاّ بإذنه) i.e. (save with His leave) which means: save before the Day of Doom, when God –be exalted– will let these gases fall down and so they will fall down on the ground and mix with each other, because of the upset of the celestial system, and become like smoke; however, at the start of its formation, the sky was like smoke. This is understood from His saying –be exalted –in the Quran, 21: 104

﴿كَمَا بَدَأْنَآ أَوَّلَ خَلْقٍ نُّعِيدُهُۥ ۚ وَعْدًا عَلَيْنَآ ۚ إِنَّا كُنَّا فَٰعِلِينَ ﴿١٠٤﴾﴾

The explanation: (As We began [its] first creation will We bring it back again –a promise [binding] upon Us; surely, We are going to perform it [as did We before.])

Question 4: Then what is this variation in the word 'heaven', so that one time it means the ethereal layers, another time it means the gaseous layers, while still other times it means the planets of the solar system?

Answer: Everything above you is called 'sky', and every high place is called sky in the Arabic language. [This is very obvious in the Arab poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

The Planets
(The Wandering Stars)

The planets receive their light from the sun, and if the sunrays had not reached the planets, then they would have become dark.

With our unaided eyes, we can see Mercury, Venus, Mars, Jupiter and Saturn. The ancient people discovered these planets as did they see them wandering in the sky field in contrast to the rest of the stars; and for this reason they called them 'the wandering stars'. Astronomers discovered Uranus at 1780, Neptune at 1848 and Pluto at 1930. The planets are nine, including the Earth; and including also the planet of the 'Asteroids' which was broken into many asteroids or planetoids, which started to revolve around Mars and Jupiter. Some of these asteroids have a diameter of one or two miles.

In addition, astronomers discovered many moons for Saturn, Jupiter, Uranus and Neptune.

Astronomers, however, think that Pluto is a planet, but I say it is merely a moon of Neptune, and actually it is not a planet. [This was published in the Arabic edition of the book at 1955. Read, also, the question about Pluto and its answer on the following few pages.]

Day and Year of the Planet

The planets revolve around the sun, in a specific orbit for each of them, and at different distances away from it. The day of a planet is the time during which the planet will complete its rotation around its own axis. And the year of a planet is the time during which it completes its revolution around the sun; the year of Earth being 365.25 days.

The Planets Have Satellites and Moons

The planets have some satellites revolving around them;

Answer: The 'sky', here, means the gaseous layers.

The explanation: God –be exalted –holds back the gaseous layers and prevents them from falling down on the earth, and if this occurs then all people will die and perish because these gases are suffocating and harmful to the health of people. The proof of this is His saying –be exalted –(إِنَّ اللَّهَ بِالنَّاسِ لَرَءُوفٌ رَّحِيمٌ) i.e. (Surely, God is All-Compassionate [and] Most Merciful to people.)

So the explanation of this Quranic revelation: is that God with His mercy made these suffocating and poisonous gases light in weight in order to rise up in the sky so that they would not do harm, until before Doomsday; because at that time they will come down to the ground. This is understood from His saying –be exalted – (إِلَّا بِإِذْنِهِ) i.e. (save with His leave) which means: save before the Day of Doom, when God –be exalted– will let these gases fall down and so they will fall down on the ground and mix with each other, because of the upset of the celestial system, and become like smoke; however, at the start of its formation, the sky was like smoke. This is understood from His saying –be exalted –in the Quran, 21: 104

﴿كَمَا بَدَأْنَآ أَوَّلَ خَلْقٍ نُّعِيدُهُۥ ۚ وَعْدًا عَلَيْنَآ ۚ إِنَّا كُنَّا فَٰعِلِينَ ﴿١٠٤﴾﴾

The explanation: (As We began [its] first creation will We bring it back again –a promise [binding] upon Us; surely, We are going to perform it [as did We before.])

Question 4: Then what is this variation in the word 'heaven', so that one time it means the ethereal layers, another time it means the gaseous layers, while still other times it means the planets of the solar system?

Answer: Everything above you is called 'sky', and every high place is called sky in the Arabic language. [This is very obvious in the Arab poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

The Planets
(The Wandering Stars)

The planets receive their light from the sun, and if the sunrays had not reached the planets, then they would have become dark.

With our unaided eyes, we can see Mercury, Venus, Mars, Jupiter and Saturn. The ancient people discovered these planets as did they see them wandering in the sky field in contrast to the rest of the stars; and for this reason they called them 'the wandering stars'. Astronomers discovered Uranus at 1780, Neptune at 1848 and Pluto at 1930. The planets are nine, including the Earth; and including also the planet of the 'Asteroids' which was broken into many asteroids or planetoids, which started to revolve around Mars and Jupiter. Some of these asteroids have a diameter of one or two miles.

In addition, astronomers discovered many moons for Saturn, Jupiter, Uranus and Neptune.

Astronomers, however, think that Pluto is a planet, but I say it is merely a moon of Neptune, and actually it is not a planet. [This was published in the Arabic edition of the book at 1955. Read, also, the question about Pluto and its answer on the following few pages.]

Day and Year of the Planet

The planets revolve around the sun, in a specific orbit for each of them, and at different distances away from it. The day of a planet is the time during which the planet will complete its rotation around its own axis. And the year of a planet is the time during which it completes its revolution around the sun; the year of Earth being 365.25 days.

The Planets Have Satellites and Moons

The planets have some satellites revolving around them;

exactly as do the planets themselves revolve around the sun. Earth has its single Moon only, while there isn't any satellite for Mercury and Venus. The satellites, even, are numerous for the planets that are far away from the sun, because these planets are of larger size than the planets that are near to the sun.

In this respect, Mars has two moons, Jupiter has twelve moons, and Saturn has ten; Saturn is characterized by its rings. Uranus has five satellites, and Neptune has two.

[Later they calculated sixteen satellites for Jupiter; more satellites were discovered for Saturn; they calculated sixteen satellites for Uranus; and eight satellites for Neptune, in addition to Pluto as a moon of Neptune. – the translator.]

The Atmosphere of the Planets

The atmospheres of the planets are different from the atmosphere of Earth. Actually, none of them has an atmosphere that is identical with the atmosphere of Earth. The gases in these planets, even, are different; for they consist of carbon dioxide, nitrogen, hydrogen, ammonia, methane and other gases. While as regards to our Earth, its air is known; most of it is of nitrogen and oxygen, and it has carbon-dioxide and water vapor, while some other gases are found in traces.

The Light and Temperature on the Planets

The planets receive their light and heat from the sun. Hence, the side to which the sunrays cannot reach, is cold and dark. The planets nearer to the Sun are very hot, while the temperature of Earth is optimal or temperate. The farthest the planet is from the Sun the more the temperature will drop down. Therefore, Mars is less hot than Earth, and so on the more the planet is far from the sun, and its surface is colder.

Distances of the Planets from Sun by Millions of Miles

The Planet	Its Distance Away From Sun
Mercury	36 million miles
Venus	67 million miles
Earth	93 million miles
Mars	141.5 million miles
Jupiter	483 million miles
Saturn	886 million miles
Uranus	1783 million miles
Neptune	2792 million miles

[From 'Al-Araby' magazine and its present (The Sun and its planets)]

The planets are inhabited

The planets are earths like our Earth. They contain mountains, seas, rivers, trees, gardens and other things which are present on our Earth. They include also animals and some kinds of intelligent human beings who worship and serve God.

[The existence, on the planets, of intelligent beings: humans and demons (or genies)]

(1) The indication of that is His saying – be exalted – in the Quran, 30: 26

﴿ وَلَهُۥ مَن فِي ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضِ ۖ كُلٌّ لَّهُۥ قَٰنِتُونَ ﴿٢٦﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (To Him belongs [as a slave] whosoever is

in the heavens and the earth. All are devoutly obedient[1] to Him.)

(2) God –be exalted –said also in the Quran, 13: 15

﴿ وَلِلَّهِ يَسْجُدُ مَن فِي ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضِ طَوْعًا وَكَرْهًا وَظِلَٰلُهُم بِٱلْغُدُوِّ وَٱلْآصَالِ ﴿١٥﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (All those who are in the heavens and the earth prostrate themselves to God –willingly or loath; so do their shadows [give witness to their prostration], day and night.)

(3) Moreover, God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 17: 55

﴿ وَرَبُّكَ أَعْلَمُ بِمَن فِي ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضِ ﴾

The explanation: ([O Mohammed,] your Lord knows best about all those who are in the heavens and the earth), and we have said that 'the heavens and the earth' means the terrestrial planets.

(4) And God –be exalted – said in the Quran, 19: 93-95

﴿ إِن كُلُّ مَن فِي ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضِ إِلَّآ ءَاتِي ٱلرَّحْمَٰنِ عَبْدًا ﴿٩٣﴾ لَّقَدْ أَحْصَىٰهُمْ وَعَدَّهُمْ عَدًّا ﴿٩٤﴾ وَكُلُّهُمْ ءَاتِيهِ يَوْمَ ٱلْقِيَٰمَةِ فَرْدًا ﴿٩٥﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (None is there in the heavens and the earth but he comes to the Most Gracious as a servant. Surely, He has counted and numbered them [one by one.]

And each one of them will come to Him on the Day of Judgment, alone.)

(5) The Glorious God said in the Quran, 23: 71

﴿ وَلَوِ ٱتَّبَعَ ٱلْحَقُّ أَهْوَآءَهُمْ لَفَسَدَتِ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتُ وَٱلْأَرْضُ وَمَن فِيهِنَّ ﴾

The explanation: (But if [God] the Just were to follow their desires [about the intercession of the prophets and saints], surely

(1) Exactly, it means they are inclined towards God only, and avoiding those other than Him.

the heavens and the earth and whosoever is therein would be corrupted)

[The existence of the plant on the planets]

Moreover, God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 27: 25

﴿ أَلَّا يَسْجُدُوا۟ لِلَّهِ ٱلَّذِي يُخْرِجُ ٱلْخَبْءَ فِي ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضِ وَيَعْلَمُ مَا تُخْفُونَ وَمَا تُعْلِنُونَ ﴿٢٥﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (Will they not adore [and obey] God Who brings forth what [plant] is hidden [under the soil] in the heavens and the earth, and knows what [secrets] you hide and what you proclaim?)

The 'hidden' means the plant because the seed is hidden under the ground, then it will come out as a plant.

[The existence of animals and man on the planets]

In addition, God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 42: 29

﴿ وَمِنْ ءَايَٰتِهِۦ خَلْقُ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضِ وَمَا بَثَّ فِيهِمَا مِن دَآبَّةٍ وَهُوَ عَلَىٰ جَمْعِهِمْ إِذَا يَشَآءُ قَدِيرٌ ﴿٢٩﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And of His signs is the creation of the heavens and the earth, and what He has spread abroad therein of beasts [: moving creatures], and He is All-Able to gather them if He wills.)

(6) God –be exalted –said also in the Quran, 55: 29

﴿ يَسْـَٔلُهُۥ مَن فِي ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضِ ۚ كُلَّ يَوْمٍ هُوَ فِي شَأْنٍ ﴿٢٩﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (Whosoever is in the heavens and the earth begs of Him; every day [their begging] is in [a new] one of [their] affairs.)

God –be exalted –also said in the Quran, 59: 24

﴿ يُسَبِّحُ لَهُۥ مَا فِي ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضِ ۖ وَهُوَ ٱلْعَزِيزُ ٱلْحَكِيمُ ﴿٢٤﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (All that is in the heavens and the earth glorify Him, and He is the Almighty, the Most Wise.)

However, there is a large number of Quranic revelations, other than these just mentioned, which indicate that the planets are inhibited.

[The mistake of Astronomers about Pluto]

Question: Astronomers say that Pluto revolves around the sun opposite to the direction of the revolution of the other planets; is this true?

Answer: I say that if Pluto was one of the planets, then it should be the biggest of the planets in size; because it is the farthest in distance from the sun than the rest of the planets, and it must revolve around the sun exactly like the revolution of the rest of the planets from right to left, then how could it happen that the revolution of Pluto is in the opposite direction?

This is an obvious mistake; for the revolution of the planets around the sun is the result of the rotation of the sun around itself; so that it pulls the planets with it by the effect of its gravitation, then how is Pluto different from the rest of the planets ? Moreover, if the size of Pluto is equal to half that of the Earth, then it is one of the satellites which belong to the planets. If it was one of the planets, then its position would be between Mercury and Venus; because it is bigger than the first and smaller than the second, so how it can be one of the planets while it is the farthest from the sun, and moreover its size is half the size of the Earth ?

As regards to its revolution, [Pluto] revolves around Neptune just like how does our Moon revolve around Earth. And because the rotation of Earth around its axis is quicker than the revolution of Moon around it, we see the Moon revolving from left to right, and as such is Pluto seen by astronomers, but the truth is opposite of that.

[A Comment by the translator – To confirm the opinion of Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, we know that the orbit of Pluto around Sun is fluctuant; i.e. one time it is nearer than Neptune to Sun, and another time it

is farther; this confirms that it revolves around Neptune, so that one time it is nearer to Sun than is Neptune and other times it is farther; see the diagram of 'the sun and its planets' just before the subject of The Material Heavens or the Planets.]

[The Mistake of Astronomers about the Asteroids]

They have mistaken as regards Pluto, and as regards the **Asteroids** too; for they said they are planets revolving around the sun. Yes, the Asteroids were one planet, and it was broken up, and those pieces of the destroyed planet became satellites, and the satellites revolve around the planets, not around the sun. [Therefore, some of them revolve around Mars, and the rest revolve around Jupiter. See the subject of 'The Asteroids' in the following pages.]

However, that planet was inhabited, but its inhabitants were infidels and disbelievers; they disbelieved, rebelled and oppressed; so God destroyed their planet and took revenge on them. God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 67: 16

﴿ ءَأَمِنتُم مَّن فِي ٱلسَّمَآءِ أَن يَخۡسِفَ بِكُمُ ٱلۡأَرۡضَ فَإِذَا هِيَ تَمُورُ ﴾

The explanation: (Do you [people] feel secure that [God] Who is in heaven will not cleave the earth with you, [as did He cleave another earth with its people before you], so that it then [shall] violently heave?)

The interpretation: Have you [people] taken security from the punishment and might of God? Aren't you afraid that He will destroy your Earth, as had He destroyed an inhabited earth before you, then those pieces of the destroyed planet started to swim and move about, i.e. swim in the space, and none had survived alive, and as such will your earth be if He breaks it up.

Therefore, if it is right that they revolve around the sun, between the orbits of Mars and Jupiter, then they must be some of the comets, which are some flaming objects, not planets. [Comets do not revolve around Sun, but they roam and move about in the space without order; see the following pages in the subject of "Comets." – the translator.]

Formation of the Planets

Know that the planets together with Earth were one object, then it was broken up into nine pieces; one of those nine was our own Earth; the other eight planets are: Mercury, Venus, Mars, Jupiter, Saturn, Neptune and the planet of the Asteroids which was broken up.

That initial and ancient earth was a sun in the ancient times; but when its surface became cold, after the end of its life, it became an earth, then it burst, becoming nine pieces which started to revolve around a new sun.

Hence, the planets are of the same kind as our Earth; their formation was simultaneous with the formation of the Earth at the same time. They contain mountains and rivers as does our Earth contain; and the Doomsday of all of them will be simultaneously, because all the planets are attracted to the Sun by gravitation, so when the life of the Sun will come to an end, it will crack -exactly as had our earth [: the previous sun] cracked before – and its terrestrial planets will be broken up altogether with it.

God –be exalted – said in the Quran, 21: 30

﴿ أَوَلَمْ يَرَ ٱلَّذِينَ كَفَرُوٓاْ أَنَّ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضَ كَانَتَا رَتْقًا
فَفَتَقْنَٰهُمَا ۖ وَجَعَلْنَا مِنَ ٱلْمَآءِ كُلَّ شَىْءٍ حَىٍّ ۖ أَفَلَا يُؤْمِنُونَ ﴿٣٠﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (Do not those who disbelieve consider that the heavens and the earth were compacted [as one mass], then We shattered them, and We made –of water –every living thing? so would they believe ?)

The interpretation: (Were compacted [as one mass] then We shattered them); here in the language of the Quran, lit. The exact words used are something like 'sutured' and 'not sutured'. The explanation: they were as one piece, then we cracked them and tore them up into many pieces; because the 'suturing' is opposite in meaning to the 'unsuturing'.

God –be exalted –said also in the Quran, 6: 14

﴿ قُلْ أَغَيْرَ ٱللَّهِ أَتَّخِذُ وَلِيًّا فَاطِرِ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضِ ﴾

The explanation: (Say [Mohammed, to the disbelievers], 'Shall I take to myself as protector[1] [anyone], other than God, the Splitter of the heavens and the earth [after being one piece]'...etc.)

Here, (the Splitter of the heavens and the earth) means: the One Who cleft or broke them up after being one object.

And God –be highly exalted –said in the Quran,6: 79; narrating what Prophet Abraham said to his people:

﴿ إِنِّى وَجَّهْتُ وَجْهِىَ لِلَّذِى فَطَرَ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضَ حَنِيفًا
وَمَآ أَنَا۠ مِنَ ٱلْمُشْرِكِينَ ﴿٧٩﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (I have turned my face to Him – Who split the heavens and the earth – I being a Hanief[2] [: a monotheist],

(1) Or Master, Manager or Guardian

(2) Hanief: is one that follows Prophet Abraham's religion of monotheism, i.e. serving God alone, and in antagonism with idolatry. This is the same as the First Commandment written in the Tablets of Moses and the Gospel of Jesus:
A-- It is mentioned in the Book of Deuteronomy, chapter 5: 7-9
"7-You shall not have strange gods in my sight.
8-You shall not make to you a graven thing, or the likeness of anythings, that are in heaven above, or that are in the earth beneath, or that abide in the waters under the earth.
B-- It is mentioned in the Gospel according to Mark, chapter 12: 29-30
"29-And Jesus answered him: The first commandment of all is: Hear, O Israel; the Lord your God is one God.
30-And you shall love the Lord your God with your whole heart and with your whole soul and with your whole mind and with your whole strength. This is the first commandment."
And the following is in the Gospel according to Mark 12:32 "There is One God and there is no other besides Him."
C-- God-be exalted- said in the Quran, 2: 163
﴿وَإِلَٰهُكُمْ إِلَٰهٌ وَٰحِدٌ ۖ لَّآ إِلَٰهَ إِلَّا هُوَ ٱلرَّحْمَٰنُ ٱلرَّحِيمُ ﴾
The explanation: (Your God is One God; there is no god save Him, the Most Gracious, the Most Merciful.)
And He -be exalted- said in the Quran, 17: 23
﴿وَقَضَىٰ رَبُّكَ أَلَّا تَعْبُدُوٓاْ إِلَّآ إِيَّاهُ ﴾
The explanation: ([O Mohammed] your Lord decreed, that you [people] must worship none save Him.) – the translator

and not of those that associate [partners or associates with God.])

God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 17: 37 narrating the advices of Luqman i.e. Tobias [to his son:]

﴿ وَلَا تَمْشِ فِي ٱلْأَرْضِ مَرَحًا إِنَّكَ لَن تَخْرِقَ ٱلْأَرْضَ وَلَن تَبْلُغَ ٱلْجِبَالَ طُولًا ﴿٣٧﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And walk not upon the earth exultantly; certainly you [man] will never tear the earth open, nor attain the mountains in height.)

'Tearing the earth open' means splitting it.

The interpretation: You will not or you cannot cleave the earth, so that you will be proud, or crack it or tear it up into many terrestrial planets that revolve around the sun; but it is God Who cleft the earth and broke it up into many planets revolving around the sun.

God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 86: 12

﴿ وَٱلْأَرْضِ ذَاتِ ٱلصَّدْعِ ﴿١٢﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And the earth that shall break up.)

This is a description of the earth that it split at the start of its formation, and it will split at the end of its life, and that will be on the Day of Doom.

Therefore, all these Quranic revelations prove that the Earth together with the terrestrial planets were one object, which He split into many pieces; these pieces will also split on the Day of Doom. [This also is the meaning of the word in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

[**N.B.:** Some of the following questions and answers may appear very simple; but, at 1947 AD, at the time of writing the Arabic book by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, such information were mysterious to

many people. Moreover, the interpreter explained this generally to people with different levels of education. – The translator.]

Question 1: If the terrestrial planets are really earths like our Earth, and that they contain living beings, water, plant, mountains and other things; then why do we see them small in size to the extent that the size of anyone of them does not seem to be more than a hen's egg?

Answer: It is evident to any thinking man that the farthest the object is from us, the smaller we see it, and the more the object comes nearer to us, the bigger in size we see it. Hence, as regards to the terrestrial planets: we see them small because they are faraway from us. Suppose that one of us was on Mars, and then he would see the earth as a bright star.

Question2: If the terrestrial planets are earths like our Earth, and then what is this light that we see in them?

Answer: The terrestrial planets, including the Earth, and together with the moons and meteorites, have no light of their own, but the light comes to them from the sun. In this respect, they are like a mirror that is placed in front of the sun. That is because these objects have water, rocks and sand, so when sun-rays fall on them, they will start to reflect the light exactly as the mirror; however, this is a recognized fact to astronomers that is not denied by any scientist.

Formation of the Earth

["3... saying, "Return to dust, O sons of men."
4 For a thousand years in your sight are like a day ..."]
- the Psalms 89: 3-4, A prayer of Moses]

[The Mistake of Astronomers and Geologists about the Origin of Earth:]

Some astronomers claim that Earth and the rest of the planets had fallen out of the sun in the form of sparks [following some explosions], then they got cold by time and became earths [or planets.] I say that this theory is wrong; because:

(1) If they were sparks –as they claim –then those sparks would not be nine only, but the formation of those sparks must be going on as time passes.

(2) Those sparks should be equal in size, or at least there should only be a little variation in size, then why do we see that Mercury is smaller than our Earth, while Jupiter is 1350 times bigger than Earth, as do they claim. (whereas in my opinion, [Jupiter] is only 12 times bigger than Earth, and not more than that.)

(3) The sparks should be oblong, but not spherical.

(4) A spark does not rotate around its axis, but it goes along floating in the space. Then how could the planets be on the contrary [i.e. they rotate around their axes, and move in their orbits around the sun]?

In addition, warm and flaming objects have a gravitational force, and they are in a continuous movement, i.e. they rotate around their axes from right to left.

Moreover, masses cannot separate from the sun, and from the planets, because of its rotation around its axis; and because of its gravitation, its size will be kept as it is.

In addition, its rotation around its axis will prevent the separation of any mass from it.

I say that Earth did not separate from our present sun, but Earth –together with the rest of the planets –were one sun, other than our present sun, and when its life ended, its surface started gradually to become cold, and in a period of two thousand years it got a cold crust; so that it was converted into an earth.

Obviously, gases emerge from the sun throughout its life, but when the earthy crust was formed, i.e. when its surface became cold, the crust prevented the emergence of gases, which started to collect in its core and exert pressure on the cold crust of that sun, and when the pressure of the imprisoned gases was increased to a certain extent, [that sun] burst and became nine pieces. And due to the presence in the space of other suns, those pieces were pulled by gravitation to the nearest sun to them [:our

present sun], and they started to revolve around it. Then after the passing of years the surfaces of these pieces became completely cold, and they became earths [or planets.] And God –be highly exalted –created on these earths: living beings, mountains, water, trees and other things.

So our Earth is one of those nine pieces, and our Sun has the same course and fate exactly as the previous suns. That sun, whose life had finished, had planets also, but when it had broken up, its planets too broke up together with that sun, and they became meteorites. As such will our terrestrial planets; they will break up and become meteorites, and that will take place when our Sun will break up.

The indication of that is His saying –be exalted –in the Quran, 21: 30

﴿ أَوَلَمْ يَرَ ٱلَّذِينَ كَفَرُوٓاْ أَنَّ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضَ كَانَتَا رَتْقًا فَفَتَقْنَٰهُمَا ﴾

The explanation: (Have not those who disbelieve consider that the heavens and the earth were compacted [as one mass], then We shattered them … etc.)

God –be exalted –said also in the Quran, 41: 9 -12

﴿ قُلْ أَئِنَّكُمْ لَتَكْفُرُونَ بِٱلَّذِى خَلَقَ ٱلْأَرْضَ فِى يَوْمَيْنِ وَتَجْعَلُونَ لَهُۥٓ أَندَادًا ۚ ذَٰلِكَ رَبُّ ٱلْعَٰلَمِينَ ۝ وَجَعَلَ فِيهَا رَوَٰسِىَ مِن فَوْقِهَا وَبَٰرَكَ فِيهَا وَقَدَّرَ فِيهَآ أَقْوَٰتَهَا فِىٓ أَرْبَعَةِ أَيَّامٍ سَوَآءً لِّلسَّآئِلِينَ ۝ ثُمَّ ٱسْتَوَىٰٓ إِلَى ٱلسَّمَآءِ وَهِىَ دُخَانٌ فَقَالَ لَهَا وَلِلْأَرْضِ ٱئْتِيَا طَوْعًا أَوْ كَرْهًا قَالَتَآ أَتَيْنَا طَآئِعِينَ فَقَضَىٰهُنَّ ۝ سَبْعَ سَمَٰوَاتٍ فِى يَوْمَيْنِ ﴾

The explanation: ([O Mohammed] say [to the idolaters]: "Do you, then, disbelieve in [God] Who created the earth in two days, and do you ascribe to Him opponents? –That is the Lord of [all] the worlds!"

"And He made [mountains] that landed upon it, blessed it,

and apportioned therein its sustenance in four days; alike for those who ask [provision.]"

"Then He tended to [build][1] the sky and it had been smoke; He said to it and to the earth, 'Come, both of you, willingly or loath.' The two said, 'We [all] have come obedient.'

"And He separated them into seven firmaments in two days …etc.")

The interpretation:

-- (Created the earth in two days) means: in two thousand years; for one day of God's days equals one thousand of our years, according to our days,

as is it mentioned in the Psalms 89: 3-4, A prayer of Moses:

"3… saying, "Return to dust, O sons of men."
4 For a thousand years in your sight are like a day ..."

The 'creation' is the transformation from one thing [or form] to another; therefore, (Who created the earth in two days) means: He transformed it into an earth after being a sun, and that lasted a period of two thousand years; this is the time during which the surface of that sun became cold, that sun whose life was ended.

-- (And He made [mountains] that landed upon it); that which heavily landed upon the earth, are the mountains. This can be explained as follows:

That sun had been transformed into an earth after the cooling of its surface, then the meteorites started to fall down on it to become the mountains. Therefore, most of the mountains on the earth surface were originally meteorites.

-- (And blessed it) means: He increased its size, and that was by many factors:

---

(1) i.e. to make the layers of the gaseous sky distinctive, and to build or to arrange it in successive layers.

First: The crust of the earth started gradually to be more and more cold; so this increased its thickness.

Second: The falling down of meteorites upon it increased its mass and volume.

Third: The falling down of minute particles upon it (these are the fine particles that we see in a beam of sun rays entering a dark room through a window.) The origin of these particles are from meteorites which were broken up after their Doomsday, so that their parts scattered in the space.

Fourth: The metals increased its volume and size by combination with other elements, e.g. the oxygen may combine with iron, so it will increase in its volume, and ferric oxide will result; and carbon dioxide combines with calcium forming calcium carbonate; and nitrogen combines with sodium and potassium resulting in sodium nitrate and potassium nitrate; and so on gases combine with most of the metals so increasing their volume, and by this way the Earth size goes on increasing with the passing of time and years.

-- (And apportioned therein its sustenance) means: He made the fall of rain upon it, and created the plant, trees and animals; to be as sustenance and provision for man; in other words: He apportioned these things as sustenance for man when He would create him on Earth; because He –be exalted –had created these things and prepared them for man before did He create man upon it, exactly just as had He created the breast of the woman before did He create the fetus in her womb.

-- (in four days) means: He created all these things during a period of four thousand years; so the total is six thousand years; because the cooling of the Earth lasted two thousand years, as He said –be exalted –in the Quran, 32: 4

﴿ ٱللَّهُ ٱلَّذِى خَلَقَ ٱلسَّمَـٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضَ وَمَا بَيْنَهُمَا فِى سِتَّةِ أَيَّامٍ
ثُمَّ ٱسْتَوَىٰ عَلَى ٱلْعَرْشِ ﴾

The explanation: (It is God Who created the heavens and the

earth and that which is between them in six [of the] days [of the Hereafter.] Then He mounted the throne)

'The heavens and the earth' means the planets.

Similar to these Quranic revelations is His saying –be exalted –in the Quran, 79: 27-33

﴿ ءَأَنتُمْ أَشَدُّ خَلْقًا أَمِ ٱلسَّمَآءُ ۚ بَنَىٰهَا ﴿٢٧﴾ رَفَعَ سَمْكَهَا فَسَوَّىٰهَا ﴿٢٨﴾ وَأَغْطَشَ
لَيْلَهَا وَأَخْرَجَ ضُحَىٰهَا ﴿٢٩﴾ وَٱلْأَرْضَ بَعْدَ ذَٰلِكَ دَحَىٰهَآ ﴿٣٠﴾ أَخْرَجَ مِنْهَا مَآءَهَا
وَمَرْعَىٰهَا ﴿٣١﴾ وَٱلْجِبَالَ أَرْسَىٰهَا ﴿٣٢﴾ مَتَٰعًا لَّكُمْ وَلِأَنْعَٰمِكُمْ ﴿٣٣﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (Are you [, associaters, that deny the sending to the Hereafter] the harder to [re-] create, or is the sky that He did construct?

He raised its high [layers[1] and lowered its low layers], and arranged it [in seven layers.]

And darkened its night [by the setting of the sun], and brought forth its day [by the sun light.]

And the earth, after that, He increased it[s crust thickness.[2]]

[And He] produced from it [: the earth] the water thereof and the pasture thereof.)

In fact, He related the night and day to the heaven as seen here: (And [He] darkened its night [by the setting of the sun], and brought forth its day [by the sun light]); because the sunrays fall on the gaseous layers, and the gases reflect these rays to the earth.

Moreover, God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 50: 7

﴿ وَٱلْأَرْضَ مَدَدْنَٰهَا وَأَلْقَيْنَا فِيهَا رَوَٰسِيَ
وَأَنۢبَتْنَا فِيهَا مِن كُلِّ زَوْجٍۭ بَهِيجٍ ﴿٧﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And the earth have We supplemented

(1) i.e. He lifted up the light gases; because of their lightness
(2) To become suitable to be inhabited.

[with dust particles, meteorites and gases], and cast on it [mountains] that heavily landed, and planted on it of every pleasant kind [of plant.])

The interpretation:

-- (And the earth have We supplemented [with dust particles, meteorites and gases]) means: He supplemented with water, dust particles and gases; and, by doing so, its size became larger. This is similar to His saying –be exalted –in the Quran 41: 10

﴿ وَبَٰرَكَ فِيهَا ﴾

i.e. (and blessed it.) It is similar also to His saying –be exalted – in the Quran, 79: 30

﴿ وَٱلْأَرْضَ بَعْدَ ذَٰلِكَ دَحَىٰهَآ ﴿٣٠﴾ ﴾

i.e. (And the earth, after that, He increased it[s crust thickness.])

The Arabic word means supplying or supplementing that is to give something in profuse amount and continuously. This is lit. What the word in Arabic means, like His saying –be exalted –in the Quran, 17: 6 ﴿ وَبَنِينَ بِأَمْوَٰلٍ وَأَمْدَدْنَٰكُم ﴾

The explanation: ([We shall] aid you with wealth and children …etc.)

[This also is the meaning of the word in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 15: 19

﴿ وَٱلْأَرْضَ مَدَدْنَٰهَا وَأَلْقَيْنَا فِيهَا رَوَٰسِيَ
وَأَنۢبَتْنَا فِيهَا مِن كُلِّ شَىْءٍ مَّوْزُونٍ ﴿١٩﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And the earth have We supplemented, and have cast on it [mountains] heavily landing, and have planted on it of every thing measured.)

God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 13: 3

﴿وَهُوَ ٱلَّذِى مَدَّ ٱلْأَرْضَ وَجَعَلَ فِيهَا رَوَٰسِىَ وَأَنْهَٰرًا
وَمِن كُلِّ ٱلثَّمَرَٰتِ جَعَلَ فِيهَا زَوْجَيْنِ ٱثْنَيْنِ﴾

The explanation: (And it is [God] Who supplemented the earth, and made [mountains] to land thereon(1), and [made therein] rivers; and –of every fruit – He made, there, two spouses(2) [: male and female.])

Therefore, all these Quranic revelations are alike in the meaning, but are different in the words.

Question 1: God –be exalted –said in the preceding Quranic revelation, 79: 31

﴿أَخْرَجَ مِنْهَا مَآءَهَا وَمَرْعَىٰهَا ﴿٣١﴾ وَٱلْأَرْضَ بَعْدَ ذَٰلِكَ دَحَىٰهَآ ﴿٣٠﴾﴾

The explanation: ([And He] produced from it [: the earth] the water thereof and the pasture thereof.)

Now, the question is: Doesn't the water fall down from the sky as rain? And the Earth was a flaming object, then how could water come out of fire?

Answer: Anyone, having elementary knowledge about chemistry, knows that water is a combination of oxygen and hydrogen, and we said that these gases emerged from the Earth, then from their combination by an electrical current, water resulted. Therefore, the origin of the water is from the earth; it evaporates by the heat of the sun, and ascends in the sky, then it becomes rain, because of the coldness there, and falls down again, on the earth.

Question 2: God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 39: 67

﴿وَمَا قَدَرُوا۟ ٱللَّهَ حَقَّ قَدْرِهِۦ وَٱلْأَرْضُ جَمِيعًا قَبْضَتُهُۥ يَوْمَ ٱلْقِيَٰمَةِ
وَٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتُ مَطْوِيَّٰتٌۢ بِيَمِينِهِۦ ۚ سُبْحَٰنَهُۥ وَتَعَٰلَىٰ عَمَّا يُشْرِكُونَ ﴿٦٧﴾﴾

(1) i.e. firm mountains that settled or landed upon the earth, after being meteorites in the space.
(2) Or two kinds.

The explanation: (And they do not esteem God as He should be esteemed, while the earth, all, will be [but] His handful on the Doomsday, and the heavens will be rolled up in His right hand. Celebrated be His praise, and exalted be He above what they associate [with Him as partners or associates.])

Now the question is: What is the meaning of His saying –be exalted - و الأرضُ جَمِيعاً i.e. (While the earth, all, will be); while the earth is only one? And suppose that there are many earths in the universe, then He should say: While the earths, will be [but] His handful on Doomsday.

Answer: His saying –be exalted - و الأرضُ i.e. (while the earth) means all the planets, and for this reason He said جَمِيعاً قَبْضَتُهُ يَومَ القِيامَة i.e. (all, will be [but] His handful on the Doomsday)

The explanation: The destroyed earth, which became planets; all will be His handful on the Day of Doom. E.g. if you buy a melon for one dollar, then somebody ask you: How much did you pay for it? Then it is not correct to say: "All of it cost me one dollar"; because it is one melon, and no need to say (all of it.) But if you divide it into nine pieces, and somebody asks you: How much did you pay for it? Here you can say: "All of it cost one dollar"; and that is to prevent him misunderstanding that you bought only one part of it for one dollar. Therefore, His saying –be exalted - و الأرضُ جَمِيعاً قَبْضَتُهُ يَومَ القِيامَة **i.e.** (while the earth, all, will be [but] His handful on the Doomsday)

Question 3: Isn't God the Owner of everything, and the earth is His handful, and at His disposal and management at any instance? Then why did He confine that to the Day of Doom?

Answer: Because there are many living beings today on the earth; some of them may own a house or a factory or an immovable property. But when the Day of Doom comes on, none will remain owning anything on the earth except God the

Lord; because all people will die on that day, and none will remain upon the surface of the earth; like His saying –be exalted –in the Quran, 40: 16

﴿ لِّمَنِ ٱلْمُلْكُ ٱلْيَوْمَ ۖ لِلَّهِ ٱلْوَٰحِدِ ٱلْقَهَّارِ ﴿١٦﴾ ﴾

The explanation: ([God will say: "O man,] to whom is the ownership this day?" [The angels and people in the gathering-together will say:] "[It belongs] to God, the One, the Dominant.")

Question 4: God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 10: 99

﴿وَلَوْ شَآءَ رَبُّكَ لَءَامَنَ مَن فِى ٱلْأَرْضِ كُلُّهُمْ جَمِيعًا ۚ أَفَأَنتَ تُكْرِهُ ٱلنَّاسَ حَتَّىٰ يَكُونُوا۟ مُؤْمِنِينَ ﴿٩٩﴾ ﴾

The explanation: ([O Mohammed,] if your Lord had willed, all those in the earth as a whole [: all the terrestrial planets] would have believed. Then can you compel people to become believers?)

Then why does He say: لآمَنَ مَنْ في الأرضِ كُلُّهم جَميعاً i.e. (all those in the earth as a whole [: all the terrestrial planets] would have believed.), while one word only, i.e. 'all' is enough?

Answer: The word 'all' is related to the word 'those', while the word 'as a whole' is related to the 'earth'.

The interpretation: All those who are in the planets would have believed, like His saying –be exalted – 39: 67

﴿ وَٱلْأَرْضُ جَمِيعًا قَبْضَتُهُۥ يَوْمَ ٱلْقِيَٰمَةِ ﴾

The explanation: (while the earth, all, will be [but] His handful on the Doomsday)

The Gravitation

Question 1: You claim that the planets are earths like our Earth, and they are scattered in the space revolving around the sun, and because of their revolution the four seasons issue, i.e. summer, winter, spring and autumn; then how do these objects revolve around the sun, and do not escape into the space?

Answer: The sun has a gravitational force that attracts these celestial objects (the planets), and prevents them from escaping in the space.

God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 35: 41

﴿ إِنَّ ٱللَّهَ يُمْسِكُ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضَ أَن تَزُولَا ۚ وَلَئِن زَالَتَآ إِنْ أَمْسَكَهُمَا مِنْ أَحَدٍ مِّنۢ بَعْدِهِۦٓ ۚ إِنَّهُۥ كَانَ حَلِيمًا غَفُورًا ﴿٤١﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (Surely, God holds back the heavens and the earth, that they escape not [the gravitation of the sun]; and if they were to escape [the gravitation of the sun], no one else than Him could hold them. He is Ever Clement [and] Most Forgiving.)

The interpretation:

-- (God holds back the heavens and the earth) means: He grasps the planets and the earth by the gravitation of the sun,

-- (That they escape not [the gravitation of the sun]) means: lest they should slip away from the sun, and scatter into the space.

-- (And if they were to escape [the gravitation of the sun],) as will they do on Doomsday,

-- (No one else than Him could hold them.) Means: Can anyone –apart from God – hold them back? That is because if the planets escape the gravitation of the sun, they will break up and become meteorites, then they will be attracted to the newly formed planets; because our sun will break up, on the Day of Doom, into planets; for this reason, God –be exalted- said: 35:41

﴿إِن أَمۡسَكَهُمَا مِنۡ أَحَدٖ مِّنۢ بَعۡدِهِۦٓ﴾

The explanation: (no one else than Him could hold them.)

The meaning: If the planets escape from the gravitation and break up, then God –be exalted –will hold these pieces by another gravitational force. The reason for the slipping of the planets from the gravitation of the sun on Doomsday is that the sun will break up and its parts will scatter in the space.

Consequently, when it will break up the planets will also break up together with it; that is His saying –be exalted –in the Quran, 82: 2

﴿وَإِذَا ٱلۡكَوَاكِبُ ٱنتَثَرَتۡ ۝٢﴾

The explanation: (And when the [terrestrial] planets [shall break up into pieces that] shall be strewn about [in the space to be meteorites.])

The interpretation: They will break up and their parts will disperse in the space; because they will become meteorites.

God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 41: 11

﴿ثُمَّ ٱسۡتَوَىٰٓ إِلَى ٱلسَّمَآءِ وَهِيَ دُخَانٞ فَقَالَ لَهَا وَلِلۡأَرۡضِ ٱئۡتِيَا طَوۡعًا أَوۡ كَرۡهٗا قَالَتَآ أَتَيۡنَا طَآئِعِينَ ۝١١﴾

The explanation: ("Then He tended to [build][1] the sky and it had been smoke; He said to it and to the earth, 'Come, both of you, willingly or loath.' The two said, 'We [all] have come obedient.')

The interpretation: The 'sky', here, means the gaseous layers,

-- (He said to it) means: to the sky,

-- ('Come, both of you) to the force of gravitation.

-- (Willingly or loath.' The two said, 'We [all] have come obedient.'); that is because the gaseous layers are attracted to the

(2) i.e. to make the layers of the gaseous sky distinctive, and to build or to arrange it in successive layers.

earth, i.e. every planet has its gaseous layers attracted to it, so that wherever the planet goes the gases [go] with it.

Question 2: Why has God –be exalted –said أَتَينا طائعينَ i.e. ('We [all] have come obedient.'); [in Arabic the word gives a plural indication], after saying قالَتا i.e. (The two said); in Arabic it indicates two or a pair ?

Answer: Every word 'earth', mentioned in the Quran, unaccompanied by the word 'heavens', and there is not 'and' in between them, then God –be exalted – means the planets, all [of them], because they were, at the start, as one earth, then it broke up, e.g. His saying –be exalted – in the Quran, 39: 67

﴿وَٱلۡأَرۡضُ جَمِيعٗا قَبۡضَتُهُۥ يَوۡمَ ٱلۡقِيَٰمَةِ﴾

The explanation: (while the earth, all, will be [but] His handful on the Doomsday)

And God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 35: 40

﴿قُلۡ أَرَءَيۡتُمۡ شُرَكَآءَكُمُ ٱلَّذِينَ تَدۡعُونَ مِن دُونِ ٱللَّهِ أَرُونِي مَاذَا خَلَقُواْ مِنَ ٱلۡأَرۡضِ أَمۡ لَهُمۡ شِرۡكٞ فِي ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ﴾

The explanation: (Say: 'Tell me your opinion concerning your associates whom you call on besides God; show me what it is they created of [all] the earth[s], or have they a share in the [gaseous] heavens?)

The interpretation: The 'earth', here, means all of it, i.e. all its parts, i.e. all the planets.

--(What it is they created of [all] the earth[s]) means: Which object of them did they create? Did they create Mars, which is part of it? Did they create Venus, Saturn or the other planets, which are parts of that earth which had broken up?

--(Or have they a share in the [gaseous] heavens?) Means: Have they any share in the gaseous layers, so that they –together with me – created the layer of the ozone, the helium, the sulfur dioxide or the rest of the gaseous layers?

Therefore, if they know and understand that God, Himself, created the planets and their gaseous layers, then why will they worship idols? And why will they not admit that God is one, particularly in their worshipping and servitude?

In summary: God –be exalted –means, here, the 'earth' before its destruction and breaking up. Also, He means by the 'sky': before its separation into layers; for He said

و هِيَ دُخانٌ i.e. (And it had been smoke). And because the earth was one, and the sky, too, was one, He mentioned them as a pair, as does the Arabic word indicate, so He said:

(قالَتا) i.e. (The two said) which means: God said to them before were they divided; then they divided and answered (أتَينا طائعينَ) i.e. ('We [all] have come obedient.'); because the earth became nine pieces, and the sky became seven layers. So it is correct that they would answer in plural, as the word in Arabic indicates. The meaning is: They did as their Lord ordered them, so they divided and said ('We [all] have come obedient.')

Therefore, His saying –be exalted – (ائتيا طَوعاً أو كَرهاً) i.e. ('Come, both of you, willingly or loath.') explains that God –be exalted – decreed on them two orders: the first was their obedience to the gravitation, and that was willingly, so the sky was attracted to the earth, and the earth was attracted to the sun; the second order was their division which was by loath; so the sky divided into seven layers, and the earth divided into nine planets. This second order, they accepted unwillingly, but they did as had their Lord ordered and they did not refuse, so they said: ('We [all] have come obedient.')

Question 3 : How can the sun attract the Earth together with the rest of the planets by the gravitational force, while it appears, to our sight, smaller in size ?

Answer: The sun is many many times larger than the earth, but because of its far distance from us, we see it small in size; for the earth together with the rest of the planets and moons, all

were as one sun, and when its life ended, it became an earth, then it broke up, so that moons and planets resulted. However, astronomers have appreciated the volume of the sun to be more than million times that of the earth.

Cause of the Gravitation

Question: Will you acquaint us about the cause of the gravitation of the sun ? For when a famous follower of Newton: Lord Kelvin, was asked: "What is the true cause of the gravitation?", he replied: "No scientist can claim that he knows the secret of the cause of the gravitation; we are completely ignorant about that; we actually know nothing about it."

Answer: With God's help, I shall answer and explain the secret [cause] of the gravitation. That is what my Lord has taught me of the Scripture [: the Book] and the wisdom; His surplus on me has been tremendous.

Know, then, that the cause of the gravitation is the heat, and the cause of the heat is the movement. This may be explained by this test:

Take a large piece of amber or sandarac [or plastic] or other things with similar properties, and start to rub it continuously with a piece of wool, you will find that it has become hot because of the successive movements, then put it on a small piece of straw, you will see that piece attract the straw; because that piece [of amber or plastic] has got a gravitational force, because of the heat obtained from the rubbing.

Therefore, the movement of the particles in the core of the earth causes the heat and the gravitation , and leads to the rotation of the earth around its axis.

So, every hot object has gravitation, and every cold object has no gravitation. Therefore, if two objects: one is hot, and the other is cold, there will be gravitation between them; because the hot object attracts the cold one. If there are two cold objects, then no gravitation will be between them. Also, if there are two objects equal in heat, then there will be no gravitation between

them. But if one of them is hot while the other is less than it in heat, then the hotter object will attract the object having less heat.

Then because the sun is a flaming object, it started to attract what objects were around it that had lesser amount of heat, i.e. the planets.

As such was the earth; because of its hot core, it started to attract what objects were around it, i.e. the moon and the meteorites.

In this respect, the other planets: having a hot core like that of the earth, they started to attract the cold objects round about them, i.e. the moons and the meteorites.

Therefore, the sun is an attracting object because it is a flaming one, and the planets are attracted, because they are lesser than the sun in heat and smaller than it in volume [and mass.]

As such will the celestial objects be: any hot object is attracting, and any cold object is attracted.

[**N.B.:** The late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, did not graduate at any school or college; he did not study Astronomy, Chemistry and other sciences; he only could read and write Arabic; but he was a man inspired of God.]

Proving that the Gravitation Is Because of the Heat

To prove that which we have just said, we mention this experiment:

1- Take a pot, put some water in it and heat it till boiling, then pour the water into another pot containing cold water. Put your hand into it and you will find the hot water rising above the cold water; that is because the gravitation [of the earth] influences the cold more than the hot object.

2- Boil the water until it starts to evaporate, and watch the vapor, how it will rise upwards. Then think about the rain, and

how it falls down to the ground; we all know that the vapor and the rain are water particles floating in the air, so why does the first rise upwards and the latter fall down to the ground? The answer: That is because the first is hot and the latter is cold; because the gravitation influences the cold more than the hot object.

3- Observe the flame of the fire, and how it goes upwards, as does the smoke go upwards; because it is hot, but when it becomes cold, it will start to stick to the walls, then it will fall as fine black particles.

4- We, all, know that mercury is a metal heavier than iron, but when you start heating it until it reaches to 357 degrees C., it will be converted, after boiling, into vapor that also will ascend upwards, and when it gets cold, it will again come down to the ground.

Therefore, all these experiments and observations indicate that the gravitation influences the cold object in particular.

The Repelling Force

Question: If it is true that the sun is attracting by its gravitational force, and the planets are attracted to it, then it must attract them till they will stick [and unite with] it, then what is the cause of the distance that we see between the sun and the planets?

Answer: Know that every flaming object is stationary in its place, but it rotates around its axis because of its central heat; its rotation is from right to left. While every cold object does not rotate around its axis, because there is no heat inside it that cause its movement, but merely it revolves around the object to which it is attracted by gravitation; and its revolution, too, is from right to left; because the attracting object is rotating in this way. E.g. Moon does not rotate around its axis; because it is a cold object, but it revolves around the Earth because it is attracted to the Earth by gravitation.

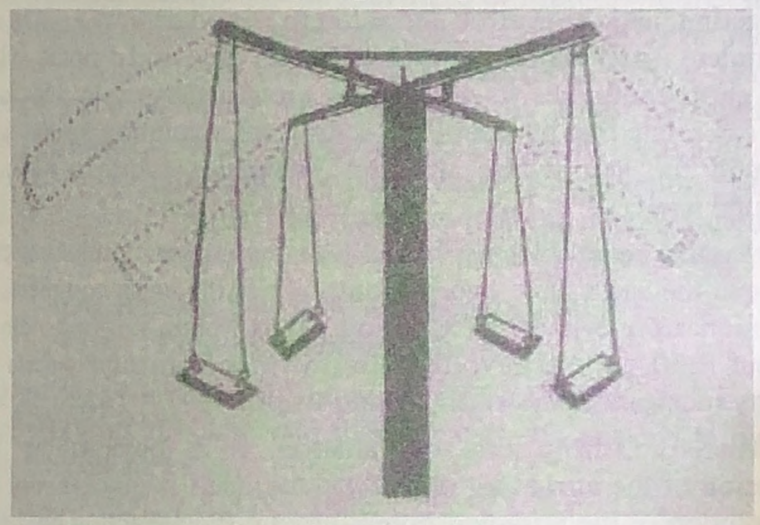
So, the Sun is relatively stationary in its place, but it rotates around its axis; and because of this rotation, another force issues, which is called the 'Repelling Force'.

The Repelling Force: As much as the attracting object increases its speed of rotation, the more the objects attracted to it will increase their distance from it. And the more this speed of rotation decreases, the more the attracted object will get near to it. Suppose that the attracting object stopped its rotation around its axis, then the attracted object approaches to it until it sticks [and unites] with it, on the condition that it should not be without heat; because the object does not stop its rotation around itself unless its core heat will finish.

In summary, the distance of the planets from the sun is because of the rotation of the sun around its axis. The example of that is the 'Round About' (or the 'Merry-go-round') which children ride for amusement and playing at fairs and festivals: [See the diagram below]: You will see the 'round about' as much as it gets quicker in its revolution, the seats on which the

children sit will get away from the axis of the round about, and spread in the space; and as much as their speed will be less, the seats will approach each other until they get nearer to the axis.

[Diagram 2]



The above diagram represents a drawing of the 'Round About', with which children play at fairs and festivals; where you see that as much as the 'round about' gets quicker in its speed of rotation, the seats –on which the children are seated – will get away from the axis of the round about and vice versa.

So this is the reason for the distance of the planets away from the sun. While the second reason for that is that as much as the attracted object is cold, the gravitation will affect it more, so it will get near to the attracting object by gravitation and vice versa.

The Movement of Objects

The attracted object is not identical in its movement with the movement of the attracting object; actually, the movement of the attracting object around its axis is quicker than the movement of the attracted object around the attracting one. E.g. the sun is attracting, and the earth is attracted to it, and here we see the sun complete its rotation around itself in 25 days and 5 hours, while the earth completes its revolution around the sun in 365 days; we can relate that by about 1: 14, i.e. one revolution for the earth around the sun, while the sun completes fourteen rotations around itself.

Another example is: the Moon completes its revolution around the earth once every month while the earth completes its rotation around itself in a period of 24 hours, i.e. in a ratio of about 1: 30, i.e. one revolution of the Moon around the earth for thirty rotations of the earth around itself.

Therefore, from this explanation, it is obvious that the rotation of the attracting object around itself is quicker than the revolution of the attracted object around the attracting one. And it is not possible to calculate exactly the movements of all the celestial objects; for there are small and big, hot and cold objects; therefore, the speed of movement of these objects are different. E.g. the smallest of our terrestrial planets is the planet Mercury, which completes its revolution around the sun in a period of 88 days, and the ratio of its movement is one revolution for Mercury to nearly about three rotations of the sun around its axis.

Question: If it is true that the gravitational force affects the cold object more than the hot one, then why is the revolution of the Moon around the Earth once for thirty rotations of the Earth around itself; in spite of that the Moon is a cold object; while Mercury, being a hot object and in spite of this, it completes one revolution around the sun for every three rotations of the sun around itself?

Answer: The gravitation of the Earth is not more than about one hundredth that of the sun; because this latter is a flaming and a very hot object, and it is large in size, whereas the Earth is a small object, compared to the Sun. Moreover, the Earth has a cold surface, but its core is hot. In addition to that, the ratio of the Moon to the Earth is not like the ratio of Mercury to the Sun; for astronomers have estimated the size of the Sun to be more than one million times that of the Earth; then how about Mercury which is smaller than the Earth by about two thirds, while the Moon is larger in relation to the Earth. Actually, its size is 1/50 that of the Earth. For this reason, its attraction by the Earth is heavier [or harder], so it cannot pull the Moon around it except once for every thirty rotations of the Earth around itself.

The Reason For The Revolution Of The Planets Around The Sun

Question: We have just known the cause of the distance of the planets from the Sun, and then what is the reason for their revolution around the sun?

Answer: We have just said that every hot object is attractive, and that it rotates around itself; and because it is a flaming object, it starts rotating around itself, and attracting the planets; for they are less than it in heat and smaller in size; and because the sun rotates around itself and attracts the planets, it starts to pull them with it, so that they will revolve around it. Therefore, the revolution of the planets around the sun is the result of the rotation of the sun around itself.

Now, suppose that the sun stops its rotation, then the planets will stop their revolution too, and moreover, they will approach the sun until they stick to it. This is what I have explained; it is some of what my Lord has taught me; while the well-known American writer Arthur Pressbine said: "We have discovered that the Earth revolves around the Sun, but even the greatest scientist has to admit he is unable to discover the reason for its revolution!"

To the reader, I shall list the duration of each planet to complete its revolution around the Sun, from the book of (Al-Jawahir) – [which is a book, in Arabic language, concerned with the interpretation of the Quran, written by the late sheikh Tantawi Jawhari]:

The Planet	Its Year
Mercury	088 days
Venus	225 days
Earth	365 days
Mars	687 days
Jupiter	4333 days
Saturn	10759 days
Uranus	30687 days
Neptune	60127 days

The Reason For The Variation In The Duration Of Planets' Revolution Around The Sun

Question: Then what is the reason for the variation in the duration taken by each planet to complete its revolution around the sun; for we see Mercury complete its revolution around the sun in 88 days, while Neptune complete it in 60127 days?

Answer: The cause of such a thing is the distance of the planet from the sun: either it is near to it or faraway from it. So that every object near to the sun will complete its revolution in a short period, and every object faraway from the sun will complete it in a long duration.

The Cause of a Planet Being Near the Sun And Another Being Far

Question: What is the reason that one object will get nearer and another may get farther? And if the sun is attracting by its

gravitation, and the planets are attracted, then they should be equal in their distances from the sun!

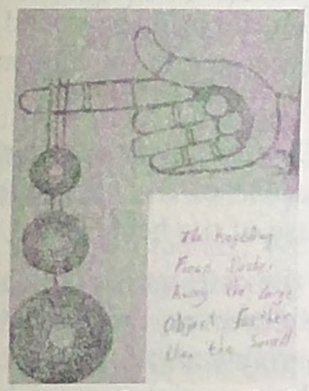
Answer: That is because of two factors:

The first: is the variation of the planets in volume; because some of them are smaller than the Earth, and the smaller the planet is the nearer it will be to the sun, and the larger it is the farthest it will be from it.

The second: is the heat; so that the colder the planet is the nearer it will be to the sun; because the gravitation influences it more. And the more hot the planet is the farthest from the sun will it be; because the gravitation does not influence it except very little.

This is an experiment to prove my words: Take three balls of wood, different in volume, and tie each one by an elastic thread, and let the threads be equal in size and elasticity, then tie the other end of each thread to a ring, and put these rings in your index finger, and move your hand in a way that makes the balls revolve around your index finger, and go on moving your hand then you will see the large ball start to get farther from your index finger, while the smaller will be the nearest to your finger, while the medium ball will be middle in its distance, and on this basis the planet will be nearer or farther from the sun.

DIAGRAM 3



The Repelling Force pushes away the big object more than the small object

To the reader, I shall list the duration of each planet to complete its revolution around the Sun, from the book of (Al-Jawahir) – [which is a book, in Arabic language, concerned with the interpretation of the Quran, written by the late sheikh Tantawi Jawhari]:

The Planet	Its Year
Mercury	088 days
Venus	225 days
Earth	365 days
Mars	687 days
Jupiter	4333 days
Saturn	10759 days
Uranus	30687 days
Neptune	60127 days

The Reason For The Variation In The Duration Of Planets' Revolution Around The Sun

Question: Then what is the reason for the variation in the duration taken by each planet to complete its revolution around the sun; for we see Mercury complete its revolution around the sun in 88 days, while Neptune complete it in 60127 days?

Answer: The cause of such a thing is the distance of the planet from the sun: either it is near to it or faraway from it. So that every object near to the sun will complete its revolution in a short period, and every object faraway from the sun will complete it in a long duration.

The Cause of a Planet Being Near the Sun And Another Being Far

Question: What is the reason that one object will get nearer and another may get farther? And if the sun is attracting by its

gravitation, and the planets are attracted, then they should be equal in their distances from the sun!

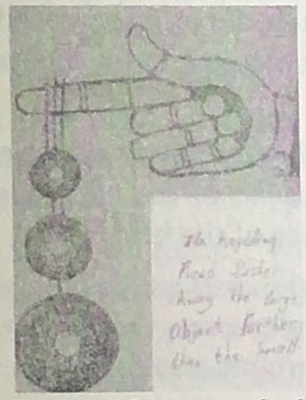
Answer: That is because of two factors:

The first: is the variation of the planets in volume; because some of them are smaller than the Earth, and the smaller the planet is the nearer it will be to the sun, and the larger it is the farthest it will be from it.

The second: is the heat; so that the colder the planet is the nearer it will be to the sun; because the gravitation influences it more. And the more hot the planet is the farthest from the sun will it be; because the gravitation does not influence it except very little.

This is an experiment to prove my words: Take three balls of wood, different in volume, and tie each one by an elastic thread, and let the threads be equal in size and elasticity, then tie the other end of each thread to a ring, and put these rings in your index finger, and move your hand in a way that makes the balls revolve around your index finger, and go on moving your hand then you will see the large ball start to get farther from your index finger, while the smaller will be the nearest to your finger, while the medium ball will be middle in its distance, and on this basis the planet will be nearer or farther from the sun.

DIAGRAM 3



The Repelling Force pushes away the big object more than the small object

The Reason for the Rotation of the Earth Around Itself

Question: Then what is the reason for the Earth to rotate around itself?

Answer: We said, in the preceding lines, that every hot object rotates around itself, and its rotation is because of the heat present in its core, and because of the gases that emerge from it. Therefore, even though the Earth surface is cold, its core is still very hot, so the rotation of the Earth around itself is the result of the heat of its core and the movement of its internal particles. The rest of the planets are similar to the Earth in this respect. The Earth will stop its rotation, if this heat finishes, exactly as had the Moon stopped its rotation around itself. An example of that: an electric lamp on which there is a view of a fish swimming in the water, and this view revolves around the lamp.

Question 2: Is heat the only cause of the rotation of the object around itself, or is there another reason for that?

Answer: The heat is only a secondary cause, while the chief cause is the circulation or revolution of the particles around the nucleus; because celestial objects are composed of a nucleus and particles that circulate around it in a great speed; and that will produce a tremendous heat; so it will flame and become a spiral nebula, then a star, then a sun, and when its life ends it becomes an earth. Therefore, the heat present in the celestial objects is the result of the circulation of particles around the nucleus in a great speed, exactly as is the heat in the human body the result of its blood circulation.

Question 3: The rotation of celestial objects around themselves; is it because of the circulation of particles around the nucleus, or because of the heat?

Answer: Heat is the distinguishing mark of celestial objects; so that we can consider every hot object as alive, and we can assert that it rotates around itself. However, the life of objects is the circulation of their particles around the nucleus; whereas death of objects is the cessation of their particles from

circulation around the nucleus. E.g. the human body in which the presence of heat indicates that he is alive; the cause of this heat is the blood circulation inside it. While coldness of the human body indicates his death, and the reason of such coldness is the cessation of the blood circulation. Therefore, the celestial objects that die: they become cold at first, then they may be called 'dead' or inanimate or not alive: like the stone, the iron, the wood …etc

Moons and Their Formation.

Moon is an earthy and stony piece that was previously detached from our Earth; as such were the moons of the planets detached from those planets.

That is because –as it has been explained – when the earth [that was a sun] broke up, it became nine pieces, which started to revolve around a new sun, which is our present sun. Each terrestrial planet started to rotate around itself; and because those pieces were not spherical, but they has projections. Those projections and prominences started to detach from the planets because of their rotation around themselves, and to get away from the planets, so that those prominences became as moons of the planets.

God –be exalted – said in the Quran, 13: 41

﴿ أَوَلَمْ يَرَوْا۟ أَنَّا نَأْتِى ٱلْأَرْضَ نَنقُصُهَا مِنْ أَطْرَافِهَا ۚ وَٱللَّهُ يَحْكُمُ لَا مُعَقِّبَ لِحُكْمِهِۦ ۚ وَهُوَ سَرِيعُ ٱلْحِسَابِ ﴿٤١﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (See they[1] not that we come to the earth and reduce it from its edges? God judges and there is none to change His judgment: and He is Swift in punishment.)

--(Reduce it from its edges) means: We detach their edges or prominences from them, in order that they will be spherical and those edges will become many moons that shine for them.

God – be exalted – said also in the Quran, 21: 44

(1) The idolaters (or associaters) of Mecca.

﴿أَفَلَا يَرَوْنَ أَنَّا نَأْتِي ٱلْأَرْضَ نَنقُصُهَا مِنْ أَطْرَافِهَآ ۚ أَفَهُمُ ٱلْغَٰلِبُونَ ﴿٤١﴾﴾

The explanation: (See they not that we come to the earth and reduce it from its edges? Is it then they who will overcome [Our apostle?])

The explanation: We decreased its mass in the past by breaking it up into nine pieces, then We reduced them from their edges, in order that the moon shines for them, and We are going to decrease them still further in the future by breaking them up, so that We make them as meteorites.

In addition to this, God – be exalted – said in the Quran, 86: 12

﴿وَٱلْأَرْضِ ذَاتِ ٱلصَّدْعِ ﴿١٢﴾﴾

The explanation: (And the earth that shall break up.)

The explanation: Its characteristic is the cracking and splitting; because it cracked and split in the past, and it will crack and split still more in the future.

God –be exalted – said in the Quran, 32: 4

﴿ٱللَّهُ ٱلَّذِى خَلَقَ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضَ وَمَا بَيْنَهُمَا فِى سِتَّةِ أَيَّامٍ﴾

The explanation: (It is God Who created the heavens and the earth and that which is between them in six [of the] days [of the Hereafter] …etc.)

--(that which is between them) means: the moons and the meteorites; because their position is between the planets.

Question 1: Are there, in the universe, moons other than our Moon?

Answer: Most of the terrestrial planets have moons, and astronomers discovered eight moons for Uranus, nine for Saturn, twelve for Jupiter, two for Mars while Neptune has only one moon. [Later they calculated sixteen satellites for Jupiter; more satellites were discovered for Saturn; they calculated sixteen

satellites for Uranus; and eight satellites for Neptune in addition to Pluto as a moon of Neptune. – the translator.]

Question 2: Why can't we see these moons?

Answer: Because of their far distance from us, and because of their small volume.

Question 3: We know that the Moon was detached from the Earth, as we can prove that from His saying –be exalted – in the Quran, 13: 41

﴿أَوَلَمْ يَرَوْا۟ أَنَّا نَأْتِى ٱلْأَرْضَ نَنقُصُهَا مِنْ أَطْرَافِهَا ۚ﴾

The explanation: (See they not that We come to the earth and reduce it [or them] from its [or their] edges?)

Then why did He say(**مِنْ أَطْرَافِهَا**) i.e. (from its [or their] edges) in plural? And why didn't He –be exalted – say: 'from its edge' in singular?

Answer: We said that if the 'earth' is mentioned alone, without mentioning the 'heavens', and if there is no 'and' between them; then He –be exalted – means by the 'earth': all of them, i.e. all the planets; so (reduce them from their edges) means: We reduce Mars by detaching from it its two moons, and We reduce Jupiter by detaching from it its moons, and reduce Saturn by detaching from it its moons, and as such are the rest of the terrestrial planets.

The interpretation: We reduce each planet of its edges; in order that the planet will be spherical; and the edges will be the moons that will shine for the inhabitant of that planet.

Question 4: God –be highly exalted – said in the Quran, 36: 40

﴿لَا ٱلشَّمْسُ يَنۢبَغِى لَهَآ أَن تُدْرِكَ ٱلْقَمَرَ وَلَا ٱلَّيْلُ سَابِقُ ٱلنَّهَارِ ۚ وَكُلٌّ فِى فَلَكٍ يَسْبَحُونَ ﴿٤٠﴾﴾

The explanation: (It is not for the sun to overtake the moon, neither does the night outstrip the day; but each [of the sun, the moon and the earth] is swimming along into a [specific] orbit.)

What is the meaning of (It is not for the sun to overtake the moon)?

Answer: God –be exalted – tells us that the sun, even though it is so big and so hot, and even though it is an attracting object; and the Moon: even though it is so small, devoid of heat and being an attracted object; in spite of these conditions, the sun cannot overtake the moon, and pull her to him; that is because of its being faraway from the sun and being nearer to the earth. All of that has only been possible with our wisdom and by our will.

Appearances of the Moon

The Moon is a stony object, spherical in shape; its core is cold, but only its face, which is in front of the sun, is hot. For this reason, it does not rotate around its axis like the earth, but it revolves around the earth once monthly.

God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 31: 16, telling about Luqman's (Tobias') exhortation to his son:

﴿يَٰبُنَيَّ إِنَّهَآ إِن تَكُ مِثۡقَالَ حَبَّةٖ مِّنۡ خَرۡدَلٖ فَتَكُن فِي صَخۡرَةٍ أَوۡ فِي ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ أَوۡ فِي ٱلۡأَرۡضِ يَأۡتِ بِهَا ٱللَّهُۚ إِنَّ ٱللَّهَ لَطِيفٌ خَبِيرٞ﴾

The explanation: ('My son, even if [the righteous deed] be [as trivial] as the weight of a grain of mustard seed[1], or in a rock or in the heavens or in the earth, God will bring it forth [for judgment]; surely, God is Most Kind, Most Aware.)

The 'rock', here, means the moon. Actually, God –be exalted –said فِي صَخۡرَةٍ i.e. (in a rock), and He didn't say 'in the rock'; because He means: in one of the moons; for this reason, He didn't mention the word 'the'.

Similar to this in meaning is His saying –be exalted – in the Quran, 4: 48

(1) Mustard-seeds: are seeds, very small in size, black and irritant; its leaves are large like the leaves of radish or chard, used with salt and vinegar as a pickle for eating. Its taste is very sharp like that of the garden peppergrass.

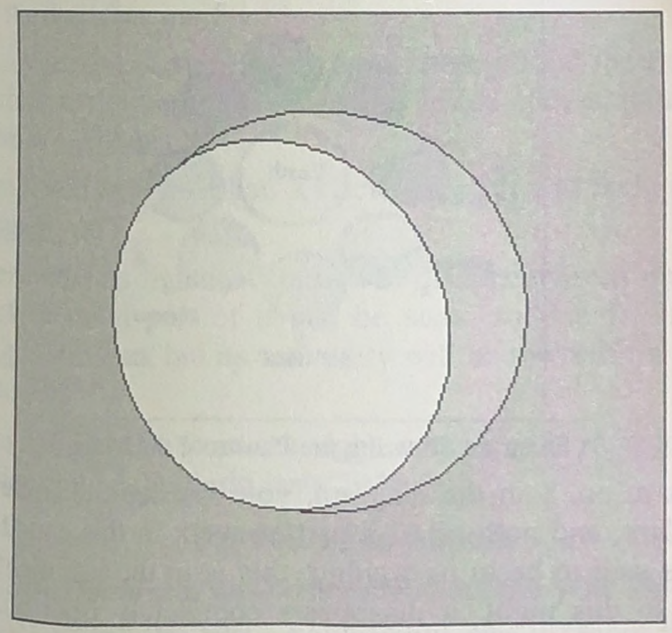
﴿إِنَّ ٱللَّهَ لَا يَغۡفِرُ أَن يُشۡرَكَ بِهِۦ وَيَغۡفِرُ مَا دُونَ ذَٰلِكَ لِمَن يَشَآءُ﴾

The explanation: (God pardons not associating [anything] with Him, but pardons anything short of that, to whomsoever He pleases.)

The Moon has two sides: one side always confronts the earth, so it sometimes appears as a crescent, other times it appears as a full moon; that is because of the reflection of the sun-light on it and because of its revolution around the earth. But we cannot see the other side because it is opposite to the visible side.

Half of the Moon is always lightened; its light is obtained from the sun, while its other half is dark and no light on it; i.e. in one half of the Moon there is day, and in the other half there is night. The duration of the Moon day is about fifteen of our days, and so is the duration of the Moon night; that is because of its revolution around the earth, and the transferring of sunrays upon its surface from one side to another.

[DIAGRAM 4]



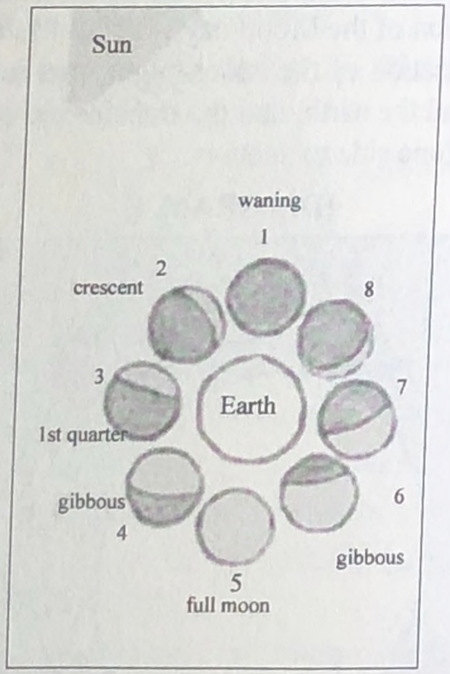
A Diagram of the Moon in the Third Night of the Month

If you observe the Moon on the third night of the [lunar] month [see the diagram above], or on the twenty-seventh night, you will see it spherical, but the lightening will be in the shape of a crescent, while the rest will appear darker; from this [observation], you can realize that the Moon is spherical in shape.

Phases of the Moon

The Moon revolves around the Earth, and because of its revolution and the shining of sunrays on it, we see it as a full moon one time, and another time we see it as a crescent, and another time we do not see it at all.

[DIAGRAM 5]



A Diagram Showing the Phases of the Moon

Look at no. 1 in the diagram, you will see the circle of the Moon dark, and nothing of it can be seen; in this condition the Moon is said to be in its waning: that is in the last night of the month. In this night, it disappears completely from our sight, because at this night it exactly lies between the Sun and the

Earth, so that its lightened face is towards the Sun, while the dark one is towards the Earth; therefore, we cannot see any part of it.

Then it starts deviating towards the north in the following night, so that a small part of it will appear, as it is seen in no. 2, when it is called a crescent.

Then it goes on in its progress in its orbit around the Earth, little by little until it will be seen as half a circle; that is on the seventh night of the month. In this condition, the Moon is said to be in the first quarter: no. 3.

And it continues in its progress around the Earth, so that more of it will appear to our sight until it will become an incomplete circle, when it is called 'the gibbous': no.4.

Going on in its orbit around the Earth, it will be a complete circle in the fourteenth night, when it is called the 'full moon'; because its lightened face is totally towards both the Earth and the Sun; i.e. opposite to its condition in its waning. For this reason, we see all of its lightened face, and we do not see any part of the dark face: no.5

After that, and because of its revolution around the Earth, its shape starts to decrease returning to its initial phases, until it will again be as a gibbous: no.6

Then it will appear as half a circle, when it will be in the 'the last quarter': no.7

Afterwards, its lightened face will disappear from our sight, that only a small part of it can be seen, so that it will be a crescent as it began, but its convexity will be towards the eastern horizon: no.8

Then it disappears from our sight, when it is in its waning. Its revolution around the Earth lasts 29 ½ days.

Traveling to Moon

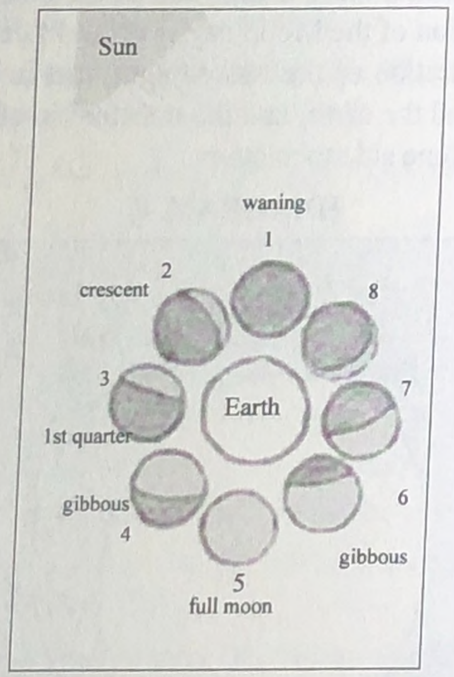
[**N.B.:** This subject was written at about the year 1947AD or (1366AH), before the space exploration and invasion by man,

If you observe the Moon on the third night of the [lunar] month [see the diagram above], or on the twenty-seventh night, you will see it spherical, but the lightening will be in the shape of a crescent, while the rest will appear darker; from this [observation], you can realize that the Moon is spherical in shape.

Phases of the Moon

The Moon revolves around the Earth, and because of its revolution and the shining of sunrays on it, we see it as a full moon one time, and another time we see it as a crescent, and another time we do not see it at all.

[DIAGRAM 5]



A Diagram Showing the Phases of the Moon

Look at no. 1 in the diagram, you will see the circle of the Moon dark, and nothing of it can be seen; in this condition the Moon is said to be in its waning: that is in the last night of the month. In this night, it disappears completely from our sight, because at this night it exactly lies between the Sun and the

Earth, so that its lightened face is towards the Sun, while the dark one is towards the Earth; therefore, we cannot see any part of it.

Then it starts deviating towards the north in the following night, so that a small part of it will appear, as it is seen in no. 2, when it is called a crescent.

Then it goes on in its progress in its orbit around the Earth, little by little until it will be seen as half a circle; that is on the seventh night of the month. In this condition, the Moon is said to be in the first quarter: no. 3.

And it continues in its progress around the Earth, so that more of it will appear to our sight until it will become an incomplete circle, when it is called 'the gibbous': no.4.

Going on in its orbit around the Earth, it will be a complete circle in the fourteenth night, when it is called the 'full moon'; because its lightened face is totally towards both the Earth and the Sun; i.e. opposite to its condition in its waning. For this reason, we see all of its lightened face, and we do not see any part of the dark face: no.5

After that, and because of its revolution around the Earth, its shape starts to decrease returning to its initial phases, until it will again be as a gibbous: no.6

Then it will appear as half a circle, when it will be in the 'the last quarter': no.7

Afterwards, its lightened face will disappear from our sight, that only a small part of it can be seen, so that it will be a crescent as it began, but its convexity will be towards the eastern horizon: no.8

Then it disappears from our sight, when it is in its waning. Its revolution around the Earth lasts 29 ½ days.

Traveling to Moon

[**N.B.:** This subject was written at about the year 1947AD or (1366AH), before the space exploration and invasion by man,

and before the landing of the first man on Moon. At that time, they postulated many theories and wrote many fictions about the life on Moon, while the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan said the true thing, even though he was not qualified and did not graduate at any college or school; for he merely can read and write in Arabic; but he was a man inspired of God.]

Man has the ambition to travel to Moon, Venus and Mars; for tourism therein and for exploring the unknown, then to return to Earth.

Concerning this subject, I say my opinion:

As regards Moon; there is no life, no water and no plant on it; because Moon is a small object, and according to the fact that the small object becomes cold before the big one, it became cold before the earth by thousands of years, and its internal heat finished. And due to the fact that the heat is the cause of the revolution of the object around itself, the Moon had stopped from rotation, and now it does not rotate around itself. The proof of that lies in the fact that we always see only one of its two faces.

[The mistake of Astronomers about Moon]

About the claim of astronomers that "it completes its rotation around itself in the same time as it completes its revolution around the Earth"; this is not correct, and does not rely on a sound base. [See the picture below, of 'a father playing with his child', and its explanation. Moon revolves around Earth, but does not rotate around itself.]

And because the small object is attracted to the big one, and that the cold object is attracted to the hot one; therefore, Moon was attracted to the Earth because it is much smaller than the Earth, and because the Earth is a hot object, while the Moon is a cold one.

Moreover, because the Earth rotates around itself –due to its internal heat – the Moon started to revolve around it because it is pulled to it by gravitation.

[DIAGRAM 6]

A photograph of a father playing with his child

An example of that: It is like a man playing with his child [See the picture above.] He holds both hands of his child and rotates with her, so that you see the father stationary in his place, but he rotates around himself, and you see the child revolving around her father, but she is not rotating around herself; and you see the child's face confronting her father's face, while the father is going on in rotation around himself.

Now let us consider the father to resemble the Earth, and his hands resemble the gravitational pull, and the child to resemble the Moon, so likewise that the child revolves around her father, but she does not rotate around herself; the earth is going on attracting the Moon to it – because of the gravitation of its core – and pulling the Moon to revolve around it – because of the rotation of the Earth around itself [i.e. Moon revolves around Earth, showing only one face, the other side being unapparent, but it does not rotate around itself.]

Therefore, the Moon completes its rotation around the Earth once monthly, so the Moon's day equals 15 of our days, and its night is like the day in duration. The day of the Moon is very hot, and the night is very cold.

In the Moon, there is little amount of gases harmful to man; therefore, the traveler to Moon cannot stay there for long time, but he may only stay for one day, then he will return to the Earth.

So, if man lands on the dayside, there he will find high degrees of temperature, and will find the ground of the Moon very hot. While if he lands on the night side, there he will find severe coldness.

This is what I had written before their traveling to the Moon, but they overcame these difficulties by making spacecrafts and aids, and they traveled to the Moon. Their first arrival to the Moon was on 20th.July, when two men landed on the Moon surface in the year 1969AD. , Then they returned to the Earth by their spacecraft. Afterwards, the journeys to Moon continued successively.

Question 1: What benefit is obtained from traveling to Moon?

Answer: Man, always, likes exploration, and wishes to check what the science has discovered about celestial objects, and to see the Earth on which he dwells while it is moving in the ethereal waves, swimming along in the space, rotating around itself, and circling around the sun like a butterfly circling around a lamp. Then he will take the photograph of the Earth from the Moon surface, and look at its continents by the telescope. At that time, he will see himself on a new land, other than that on which he was dwelling, and for him there will be a new moon, i.e. the Earth itself, larger than that which he was seeing from the Earth, by fifty times.

Question 2: If we travel to the Moon, then we look to the Earth, shall we see it in the shape of a full moon –always and every day – or will it appear as a crescent, then as a full moon, as is the case with our Moon?

Answer: The appearance of the Earth from the surface of the Moon is just like the appearance of the Moon from the Earth,

and no difference between the two. So, as we see the Moon, likewise we shall see the Earth as a crescent one time, and as a full moon another time, but the difference between the two is that the Moon appears to be small in size, while the Earth appears fifty times larger than it. The other difference is that we can see one of the two faces of the Moon, while as regards the Earth: we can see all its continents, so that if we look at it by the telescope, while we are on the surface of the Moon (and when the Earth is at its full moon phase), then we shall see it like a [movie film displaying to us its continents, mountains and seas, and what it contains on its surface during a 24-hour period: so as if we have made tourism round the Earth, and traveled all those long distances by this short period.

The Traveling to Venus Is Dangerous

The volume of Venus was two-thirds that of the Earth, but later it shrunk, so that its volume becomes somewhat smaller. It was completing its rotation around itself in a period of 16 hours, so that its day was 8 hours, so was its night. But Venus stopped its axial rotation, and now it does not rotate around its axis; therefore, the day and night of Venus have become everlasting, and they do not succeed each other, because of the depletion of its internal heat, and because heat is the reason for the rotation of an object around itself.

The central gravitational force of Venus was keeping what living organisms were on it, just like the Earth, but it finished since the depleting of its central heat; and, actually, Venus became like our Moon, having no gravitation except that which it obtains from the sun heat, and that is in the day-side, i.e. the side which is in front of the Sun.

Venus, in the past, was inhabited; for there were human beings, animals, plant, trees and other things; but the life on Venus ended because of its standstill from axial rotation, and all its inhabitants died, its rivers dried and its trees burnt; therefore, whosoever was on the day-side died from excessive heat and

thirst, and whosoever was on the night-side died from excessive coldness and starvation. If anyone goes to Venus and lands on the day-side, he will die from excessive heat; and if he lands on the night-side, he will suffer there from severe coldness and lack of food, and the Sun may draw him by its gravitation so he will die because or its rays [or heat]; that is because Venus is devoid of gravitation, and because of being near to the Sun. The traveler to Venus, then, will find towns, houses, clubs and shops, but will not see anyone dwelling therein; he will see furniture and property, but will not see any owner of them; he will see rivers but without water; and trees but they have been burnt by the Sun heat.

The Traveling to Mars Is Successful

Mars is larger than Earth by less than two times; it completes its rotation around itself in a period of about 44 hours. Therefore, its day is 22 hours, and so is its night, and its year equals about two of our years. Mars is inhabited and contains plant, trees, animals, human beings, mountains, rivers, seas and other things. Hence, the dwelling in Mars is suitable; because the traveler to Mars will find the water there available; he, too, will find ample food and much fruit, but we don't know whether the weather, the temperature, and air-constituents there are suitable or not for the man of Earth; but we think that man can overcome these difficulties, or at least he can adapt himself to them.

The Emigration to Mars

Earth rotates around itself because of its central heat, so that the day and night result from its rotation, but this heat will finish because of the eruption of volcanoes and the emergence of fire and gases to the outside, and it will stop from its axial rotation as time and years pass by, just as how had Mercury and Venus stopped before.

Consequently, the day and night will be everlasting and will not succeed each other, so that the heat will become very severe

on the day-side; therefore, rivers will evaporate, trees will burn out, animals will perish and people will die at that time from severe heat, thirst and starvation; while those dwelling in the night-side will die from severe coldness and starvation. At that time, death will be on Earth and life on Mars.

God –be exalted – said in the Quran, 10: 24

﴿ إِذَآ أَخَذَتِ ٱلْأَرْضُ زُخْرُفَهَا وَٱزَّيَّنَتْ وَظَنَّ أَهْلُهَآ أَنَّهُمْ قَٰدِرُونَ عَلَيْهَآ أَتَىٰهَآ أَمْرُنَا لَيْلًا أَوْ نَهَارًا فَجَعَلْنَٰهَا حَصِيدًا كَأَن لَّمْ تَغْنَ بِٱلْأَمْسِ ﴾

The explanation: (Till when the earth is decked with its ornaments [of the green plant and colorful flowers] and is embellished [with much plant and fruit], and its people think they have power of disposal over it[s crops: about to harvest it;] there comes to it Our order, [to destroy it], by night or day, and We make it stubble, as if it did not flourish only the day before.)

Comment: Americans took photographs of certain areas of Mars by their space-crafts in the year 1965A.D., and they said that nothing appeared in the photos which might indicate signs of the existence of life on Mars. I say that the camera caught part of the uninhabited desolate desert of Mars, by chance, and did not view the inhabited region of Mars, in order to transmit its picture to the Earth, and this will take place in the future.

An Anticipated Meeting Between the Inhabitants of Earth and the Inhabitants of Some Other Planets

Astronomers are primarily concerned today in the search for the possibility of life on other planets like Mars, Jupiter, Saturn and the other planets. They prepared everything possible for that; they planned for it, and even they designed signs and marks which they broadcasted throughout the space to find their way by them and for mutual understanding with any intelligent creature that might be existent on the other planets.

In this respect, we can assure that this will take place by God's will. Sooner or later, the humanity will one day face an

exciting, and may be a fruitful, meeting between the inhabitants of Earth and the inhabitants of one [or more] of the terrestrial planets. Mars may be the most anticipated planet for this event, because of the information that astronomers have obtained about it, and which affirm the existence of water and other essentials of life on its surface.

To confirm my words about such anticipated meeting between the inhabitants of Earth and the inhabitants of some other planets, I refer to the word of God, in the Quran, 42: 29

﴿ وَمِنْ ءَايَـٰتِهِۦ خَلْقُ ٱلسَّمَـٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضِ وَمَا بَثَّ فِيهِمَا مِن دَآبَّةٍ ۚ وَهُوَ عَلَىٰ جَمْعِهِمْ إِذَا يَشَآءُ قَدِيرٌ ﴿٢٩﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And [one] of His signs is the creation of the heavens and the earth, and what He has spread abroad therein of beasts [: moving creatures]; and He is All-Able to gather them if He wills.)

The interpretation:

--(And [one] of His signs is the creation of the heavens and the earth) It means: Among His signs that indicate His existence is the creation of the terrestrial planets including the earth,

--(And what He has spread abroad therein of beasts [: moving creatures]) i.e. the creatures [:animals and human beings] that move on these planets including the Earth.

--(And He is All-Able to gather them if He wills.)

Here, there is a clear declaration about the possibility of meeting between the inhabitants of some of the planets and the inhabitants of Earth. But if God –be exalted – meant by that the 'gathering-together' of the Judgment Day, when souls will be gathered together for judgment, then He would not mention that with (if He wills), but the Quranic revelation would come in an affirmation form, as it is noticed in many Quranic revelations concerning the gathering and congregation on the Day of the 'gathering-together for Judgment then the reward or punishment; e.g. His saying –be highly exalted –in the Quran, 36: 53

﴿ إِن كَانَتْ إِلَّا صَيْحَةً وَٰحِدَةً فَإِذَا هُمْ جَمِيعٌ لَّدَيْنَا مُحْضَرُونَ ﴿٥٣﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (It [will] be but one shout [of the angel Israfel], and behold! they will all be brought to Us [: to the gathering-together in the space.])

Also His saying –be exalted –in the Quran, 36: 51

﴿ وَنُفِخَ فِى ٱلصُّورِ فَإِذَا هُم مِّنَ ٱلْأَجْدَاثِ إِلَىٰ رَبِّهِمْ يَنسِلُونَ ﴿٥١﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And when the 'Horn'(1) will be blown; behold, they will go up –from the graves – in crowds, to their Lord [: to the gathering-together in the space.])

In addition, God –be exalted – specified this meeting with His Ability to accomplish it, and that is by saying قدير i.e. (All-Able); because it is very difficult to mankind at the present to make such a meeting without some aid for that. But nothing is difficult to God, the Glorious, the Almighty Who is All-Able to gather between the people of Earth and the inhabitants of some other planets like Mars for example, in this life of the World before the Hereafter; and that is by inspiring man the science and knowledge to achieve his goodly ambition to explore the unknown in the horizons of the heavens and earth.

However, we don't want to precede or anticipate the events before their occurrence, but we expect many tremendous achievements in Astronomy.

The Asteroids

[The mistake of astronomers about the Asteroids]

Astronomers claim that the Asteroids are small planets or planetoids that revolve around the Sun between the orbits of

---

(1) i.e. the cold crust that will be formed for the sun at the end of its life, and the blowing will be that of the gases rushing out through a crack in the crust, resembling the horn, in which ancients used to blow

- A Comment by the translator: Notice, dear reader, that the external shape of the horn [of animals] is like volcano rocks which result from the cooling of the volcanic lava.

Mars and Jupiter, and most of them complete their revolution in three and a half years, while some others complete that in six years. However, most of them cannot be seen with the unaided eye except Physta.

I say that the Asteroids are not small planets, but are satellites of the terrestrial planets, just like the meteorites and moons. The asteroid, that completes its revolution around the sun in a short period, is a satellite of Mars; whereas that which completes it in a longer period is a satellite of Jupiter. Or they may be some flaming objects just like the comets. If they were some terrestrial planets, then they should be [very] near to the sun; because of their small volumes, according to the rule of the pulling force and the repelling force. [See also the article concerning the Asteroids just before the subject of 'Formation of the Planets'.

The Eclipse

Celestial objects are not equal in their distances from Earth. Therefore, it may happen that one object passes in front of another object, between the far one and us. This will lead to hiding of the far object from our sight.

In the eclipse of the sun: it happens that Moon passes exactly between Earth and Sun, so as to hide its light from us. Here, the reader may ask: How is it possible for the Moon to hide the Sunlight, while it is bigger than the Moon by much many times?

The answer is that the Sun and the Moon appear to be equal in size; because the Moon is nearer to the Earth than it is to the Sun. The ratio between the distances of each of the two objects is nearly equal to the ratio between their sizes.

However, it may happen that the Moon passes exactly between the Sun and us. Those, [people] that are present opposite to their centers, will see the Moon, when the eclipse is complete, covering all the face of the Sun. This is what we call 'The Total Eclipse'.

But when the Sun is at its nearest distance, then its face will be larger than the face of the Moon, and this latter will be seen

to cover its face, except a narrow ring left around it, this is what astronomers call: the 'Annular Eclipse.'

If the Moon passes in front of part of the Sun, then the eclipse will be 'Partial'.

Before the completion of the total or annular eclipse, the Moon passes across the face of the Sun. After the completion of the eclipse, the Moon starts to unveil the Sun gradually and slowly until the unveiling is complete, and it returns back to its initial state of light and shining.

The maximum number of eclipses in a year is about five, and the minimum is two.

The eclipse of the Moon is different from that of the Sun; and the explanation of this is that the Earth has a shadow extending behind it to a distance of about 900 000 miles, and when it happens that the Moon falls within this shadow, during its revolution in its orbit around the Earth, then there will be a Complete Eclipse of the Moon.

Astronomers, now, are able to calculate the dates of the eclipse of the Sun and the eclipse of the Moon, and to anticipate their timing before their occurrence.

In one year, there might be no eclipse of the Moon; sometimes, there are two eclipses for the Sun and three for the Moon. More often there are five for the Sun and two for the Moon, but mostly the eclipse of both Sun and Moon do not exceed four only.

Meteorites

Meteorites are cold objects, having no heat; because they are earthy pieces, which are also called the Celestial Rocks. They are variable in size: some of them are as big as a mountain, while others are more larger, or may be smaller; the smallest of them are about half cubic meter.

They are attracted to Earth by gravitation, just like the Moon; because they are cold objects, while the Earth is hot. In like

manner, each terrestrial planet has its own meteorites, attracted to it by gravitation.

Their distances from the Earth vary according to their volumes; therefore, the small will be near to the Earth, and the big will be far from it; according to the rule of the pulling and repelling forces.

These meteorites revolve with the Earth from right to left, just like the revolution of the Moon. The big ones among them contain rainwater and snow; for they are nearer to the Earth than they are to the Moon. On them there are some plants; and some of the small animals live there which are not much harmed by coldness like frogs, fish and something like that.

The origin of meteorites is from the remnants of some planets that were broken up in the ancient times, after their Doomsday. They include large amounts of metals: like iron, lead, chrome, nickel, platinum and others. Sometimes, some of them may fall in Europe and other parts of the world, and people there find these metals included in these meteorites.

One of nice tales is that a meteorite or a celestial rock fell in Punjab (: a district in the north west of the Indian subcontinent.) The emperor Jehangere made, from its iron, a sword which people called 'The Thunderbolt Sword.'

There is a meteorite in the American Museum of Natural History at New York, which weighs 36 ½ Tons; its volume is about 385 cubic feet.

In the year 1908A.D., a meteorite weighing more than 136 Tons fell in Siberia plains near Fenovara.

It is assumed that more than forty thousand Tons of ash, dust and meteoritic rocks fall on the Earth every day.

In Iraq, a meteorite fell near Kirkuk city and broke up. It weighed about 35 Kg, and that was on the 20th.of August 1977AD. It fell at daytime; its color was grey with some crystallization, and its pieces were taken to the museum.

It was mentioned in the Al-Hilal magazine, no.295, of the year 1975, under the title of:

" Indians and the Spanish

"Spanish pioneers heard the Indians, dwelling at the north of Argentina, speaking about some masses of iron that had fallen from the sky, at the 'Heaven Fields', as they called it at that time.

Immediately, some teams were formed in the years 1774-1776, to investigate that, hoping to find some amounts of silver, like that they had before found at Peru.

The samples, they obtained, indicated that they were of pure iron. But the Spanish adventurers did not satisfy with what they discovered, so they sent some other teams to search, hoping to discover some iron mines.

The officer Michel Rubin De Sless, a man of the Spanish Royal Navy, was chosen for this job. He continued the operations of excavation, but the accumulated sand had buried under it another mass weighing 15 Tons, which has never been discovered afterwards.

Later on, in 1808, another mass was discovered, in the same region, weighing one ton. Scientists were convinced that it was one of the meteorites that had fallen upon the Earth; so they sent it to the British Museum at London.

In summary, we say that meteorites originally were some inhabited earths, which contained plant, animal and man; just like our Earth, and they were attracted by gravitation to that sun that had broken up into many pieces, and those [earths or planets] were circling around it. When that sun cracked, it's [planets] also cracked and broke up altogether with it, and they became meteorites.

As such will our Earth be when its Doomsday will take place; because it will be broken up and become meteorites.

When the meteorites are mentioned in the Quran, they are mentioned by the word 'mountains'; this will be explained later on, when we shall speak about mountains.

God –be exalted – said in the Quran, 11: 82-83

﴿ فَلَمَّا جَآءَ أَمۡرُنَا جَعَلۡنَا عَٰلِيَهَا سَافِلَهَا وَأَمۡطَرۡنَا عَلَيۡهَا حِجَارَةٗ مِّن سِجِّيلٖ
مَّنضُودٖ ٨٢ مُّسَوَّمَةً عِندَ رَبِّكَۖ وَمَا هِيَ مِنَ ٱلظَّٰلِمِينَ بِبَعِيدِۭ ٨٣ ﴾

The explanation: (And when our decree issued, we made their [houses] high parts their low parts. And we rained down upon them packed sedimentary stones, marked [i.e. having marks from their origin by sedimentation], with [the knowledge of] your Lord [O Mohammed.] And they are never far from the transgressors.)

The 'stones', here, means the meteorites.

God – be exalted – said in the Quran, 34: 9

﴿ إِن نَّشَأۡ نَخۡسِفۡ بِهِمُ ٱلۡأَرۡضَ أَوۡ نُسۡقِطۡ عَلَيۡهِمۡ كِسَفٗا مِّنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِۚ ﴾

The explanation: (Did We will We would cleave the land open with them, or bring down on them [some] fragments from the sky …etc.)

The interpretation: If we will We would make, to fall on them, some meteorites from the space; the 'fragments', here, means the meteorites.

God –be exalted –said also in the Quran, 52: 44

﴿ وَإِن يَرَوۡاْ كِسۡفٗا مِّنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ سَاقِطٗا يَقُولُواْ سَحَابٞ مَّرۡكُومٞ ٤٤ ﴾

The explanation: (But if they should see some fragments of the sky falling down, they would say: " [It is only some] 'Accumulating Clouds'. ")

Here, the 'fragments' means the meteorites.

God – be exalted – said in the Quran, 57: 25

﴿ وَأَنزَلۡنَا ٱلۡحَدِيدَ فِيهِ بَأۡسٞ شَدِيدٞ وَمَنَٰفِعُ ﴾

(And We sent down the iron [included in the meteorites falling down from the space], in which are both keen violence and [many] advantages to people, …etc.)

The 'iron' mentioned here, He sent it down included in the meteorites.

God – be highly exalted – said in the Quran, 27: 88

﴿ وَتَرَى ٱلۡجِبَالَ تَحۡسَبُهَا جَامِدَةٗ وَهِيَ تَمُرُّ مَرَّ ٱلسَّحَابِۚ صُنۡعَ ٱللَّهِ ٱلَّذِيٓ أَتۡقَنَ كُلَّ
شَيۡءٍۚ إِنَّهُۥ خَبِيرُۢ بِمَا تَفۡعَلُونَ ٨٨ ﴾

The explanation: (And you [man] see [or think about] the mountains, and suppose them fixed [or stationary], while they pass by like the passing of clouds – God's handiwork, who has perfected everything. He is All-Aware of the things that you [people] do.)

The 'mountains', here, means the meteorites; the proof of that is their liking to the cloud, because the meteorites move above us like the cloud. That is according to His perfection of His creation and work. It is He Who perfectly made everything.

On the other hand, the astronauts, who went in the spacecrafts, saw the Earth Mountains move with the movement of the Earth.

Question 1: How do these meteorites move in the space, and do not fall on the earth?

Answer: They are [in this respect] like the Moon; for it does not fall on the Earth; because the Earth has a gravitational force due to the heat of its core, and it has a repelling force due to its rotation around itself.

Question 2: If these meteorites are truly present in the space, then why can't we see them? While God – be exalted – said in the Quran 27: 88 (و تَرى الجبالَ) i.e. (And you [man] see [or think about] the mountains)?

Answer: Because they are small objects, and we may see some of them in the sky, but we may, then, think that they are stars.

As regards the Arabic word تَرَى i.e. (see [or think about, or know]), in Arabic, means to think about or know, and does not here indicate: to look at. God – be exalted – said in the Quran, 105: 1

﴿ أَلَمْ تَرَ كَيْفَ فَعَلَ رَبُّكَ بِأَصْحَٰبِ ٱلْفِيلِ ۝ ﴾

The explanation: (Have you not known how your Lord dealt with the host of the Elephant ?

Question 3: We all know that the Earth is rich in its raw iron, then why was He –be exalted – Gracious and Generous with us by making the fall down of iron included in the meteorites, while it is very little compared to the raw iron present on the Earth? For God – be exalted – said in the Quran, 57: 25

﴿ وَأَنزَلْنَا ٱلْحَدِيدَ فِيهِ بَأْسٌ شَدِيدٌ وَمَنَٰفِعُ ﴾

i.e. (And We sent down the iron [included in the meteorites falling down from the space], in which are both keen violence and [many] advantages to people)

Answer: The iron present in the earth is a raw material, and there is no free iron in it, while that present in the meteorites is a free iron, and not in its raw form. People in the ancient times, were unfamiliar with the purification of iron from its raw form; therefore, they obtained the iron from meteorites, of which they made various utensils like knives, axes, saws …etc.

However, iron is not found free in the Earth; because, it is oxidized by the oxygen of the air. While that which is in the meteorites does not oxidize because the oxygen there [in the higher atmosphere] is little in amount.

The Merkson Meteorite

The Arabic magazine 'Science and Life', no.7, vol.3, March 1971, mentioned the following:

"In Sept.1969, a meteorite fell in Australia, Merkson city. The parts of this meteorite were investigated by a group of scientists of the National Sea Transport Agency. Those scientists, by using delicate analytical methods, were able to discover sixteen amino acids in this meteorite, which are the essential constituents of the living protein. Only five among

them were of the known types existent in the bodies of the organisms living on Earth. (There are twenty amino acids on Earth.)

They, too, found on this meteorite some organic compounds (: hydrocarbons) of the kind found on Earth surface.

This discovery was of great importance, not only because this event was the first of its kind in which amino acids were discovered on meteorites, or in which bacterial fossils were proved to be present, but because it was the first condition in which it is ascertained that these substances were from outside the Earth, and they did not come from contamination with the Earth substances; that was for the following reasons:

(1) Some of these amino acids have no analogue on Earth; therefore, its Earth origin was absolutely excluded.

(2) The ratio of the C130 in the Merkson meteorite, as is it in some other meteorites, differs greatly from this ratio in the Earthy life.

(3) The spectrograph of one of the hydrocarbon compound groups, present on the Merkson meteorite, differs greatly from what is present on Earth surface.

According to such clues, scientists have decided that the substances, discovered on the Merkson meteorite, are not from Earth, and that the amino acids and hydrocarbons formed in a place other than the Earth.

The discovery of some amino acids, in a small object like the Merkson meteorite, opened a new research [field] about the probability of the existence of organic substances like these or more complex than them, or the existence of living substances in some larger objects like the planets Mars and Venus."

Mountains

The mountains of Earth are four kinds: some of them were formed because of the volcanoes; others due to the wearing away and erosion, and due to earthquakes and land depressions;

others because of land contraction and breaking of its surface: those latter are the Elongated Chained Mountains* [i.e. the long mountain ranges.] But most of the mountains are due to falling of meteorites upon the Earth; the mountains are still falling now and then in some countries, till the present time.

God – be highly exalted – said in the Quran, 16: 15

﴿ وَأَلْقَىٰ فِي ٱلْأَرْضِ رَوَٰسِيَ أَن تَمِيدَ بِكُمْ وَأَنْهَٰرًا وَسُبُلًا لَّعَلَّكُمْ تَهْتَدُونَ ﴿١٥﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And He cast [mountains] that landed on the earth; lest it should irregularly move with you; and [made on it] rivers and ways; that you may find your way.[1])

Those 'that landed' are the mountains; which, actually, are some meteorites that landed and settled on the Earth, i.e. they were fixed and became firm and stationary upon it.

God – be exalted – said in the Quran, 13: 3

﴿ وَهُوَ ٱلَّذِي مَدَّ ٱلْأَرْضَ وَجَعَلَ فِيهَا رَوَٰسِيَ وَأَنْهَٰرًا وَمِن كُلِّ ٱلثَّمَرَٰتِ جَعَلَ فِيهَا زَوْجَيْنِ ٱثْنَيْنِ ﴾

The explanation: (And it is [God] Who supplemented the earth, and made [mountains] to land thereon, and [made thereon] rivers, and – of every fruit – He made, there, two spouses[2] [: male and female], …etc.)

Here, those 'that were made to land' means the mountains.

God – be exalted – said in the Quran, 15: 19

﴿ وَٱلْأَرْضَ مَدَدْنَٰهَا وَأَلْقَيْنَا فِيهَا رَوَٰسِيَ وَأَنۢبَتْنَا فِيهَا مِن كُلِّ شَيْءٍ مَّوْزُونٍ ﴿١٩﴾ ﴾

(1) To the town or country where you intend to go
(2) and two kinds

The explanation: (And the earth have We supplemented[1], and cast on it heavily- landing[2] [mountains], and planted on it of every thing measured [or balanced.])

Therefore, (and [We have] cast) means: He threw or cast the meteorites from the space upon the Earth, so that they anchored on it and became the mountains.

God – be exalted – said in the Quran, 41: 10

﴿ وَجَعَلَ فِيهَا رَوَٰسِيَ مِن فَوْقِهَا وَبَٰرَكَ فِيهَا وَقَدَّرَ فِيهَآ أَقْوَٰتَهَا فِيٓ أَرْبَعَةِ أَيَّامٍ سَوَآءً لِّلسَّآئِلِينَ ﴿١٠﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And He made [mountains] that landed upon it, blessed it, and apportioned therein its sustenance in four days; alike for those who ask [provision.])

Moreover, God – be exalted – said in the Quran, 79: 32

﴿ وَٱلْجِبَالَ أَرْسَىٰهَا ﴿٣٢﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And the mountains He did firmly set.) The 'mountains' means the meteorites. It means: He fixed them upon the earth.

God – be exalted – said in the Quran, 13: 4

﴿ وَفِي ٱلْأَرْضِ قِطَعٌ مُّتَجَٰوِرَٰتٌ وَجَنَّٰتٌ مِّنْ أَعْنَٰبٍ ﴾

The explanation: (There are, in the earth, pieces adjacent to each other, and gardens of vines)

The explanation:

- (There are, in the earth, pieces) means: they are not from the earth;
- (Adjacent to each other) means: they neighbored each other after being dispersed in the space. Those pieces were the meteorites because they came to the earth from the space.

(1) i.e. He increased its mass by the falling on it of water, dust particles, meteorites and gases.
(2) i.e. firm mountains that settled or landed upon the earth, after being meteorites in the space.

God – be exalted – said in the Quran, 57: 25

﴿ وَأَنزَلْنَا ٱلْحَدِيدَ فِيهِ بَأْسٌ شَدِيدٌ وَمَنَـٰفِعُ لِلنَّاسِ﴾

The explanation: (And We sent down the iron [included in the meteorites falling down from the space], in which are both keen violence and [many] advantages to people, …etc.)

It means: He sent down iron, included in the meteorites; from these [meteorites] the mountains were [also] formed.

God – be highly exalted – said in the Quran, 88: 17-19

﴿أَفَلَا يَنظُرُونَ إِلَى ٱلْإِبِلِ كَيْفَ خُلِقَتْ ﴿١٧﴾ وَإِلَى ٱلسَّمَآءِ كَيْفَ رُفِعَتْ ﴿١٨﴾
وَإِلَى ٱلْجِبَالِ كَيْفَ نُصِبَتْ ﴿١٩﴾﴾

The explanation:
(17- Do they not consider how the camel is [wisely] created!?
18- how the sky is raised high [above the earth, without pillars that they see!?
19- how the mountains are set up [on the earth like pegs!?])

As regards the mountains, which were formed from the denudation and erosion and changes in the earth surface, they are mentioned in His saying – be exalted – in the Quran, 35: 27

﴿أَلَمْ تَرَ أَنَّ ٱللَّهَ أَنزَلَ مِنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ مَآءً فَأَخْرَجْنَا بِهِۦ ثَمَرَٰتٍ مُّخْتَلِفًا أَلْوَٰنُهَا ۚ وَمِنَ
ٱلْجِبَالِ جُدَدٌۢ بِيضٌ وَحُمْرٌ مُّخْتَلِفٌ أَلْوَٰنُهَا وَغَرَابِيبُ سُودٌ﴾

The explanation: (Do you [Mohammed] not see how God sends down [rain] water from the sky, and We bring forth therewith produce of various colors,--and of mountains, [also He brings forth therewith], newly-formed mountains: white and red, of various colors, --and black brands of coal.)

Therefore, (and of mountains) is related to (and We bring forth therewith produce).

The interpretation: With the aid of rainwater, we made new mountains. That is because the rain will solve the carbon dioxide gas present in the air, so that carbonic acid will be formed,

which will solve some parts of the calcium-containing rocks present in the mountains, so it will go down to the low lands and seas, and will once again petrify, and as such will the process go on with the passing of time, until a new mountain will result.

- (And black brands of coal.) Means: With the aid of rainwater we formed black brands of coal. He means: the brands of coal; for it petrifies with the aid of carbonic acid formed by the rainwater. Actually, God – be exalted – said غَرابِيبُ i.e. (coals) or (brands of coal) in plural; because the brands of coal are four kinds.

In summary, the meteorites and the mountains are mentioned in the Quran, by one name, i.e. جبال i.e. mountains[1].

Life Is Transmissible (or Migrant)

You have to know that the origin of the seed of life was not from the Earth; because Earth, together with the rest of the terrestrial planets, were one flaming sun; and it is impossible for life to originate from the fire. But life, in fact, came to our Earth from the old planets that had broken up into meteorites; some of which fell down on Earth and became the mountains of our Earth. When rainwater fell down, those seeds and remnants of trees started to grow and enlarge because of the water.

God – be exalted – said in the Quran, 21: 30

﴿ وَجَعَلْنَا مِنَ ٱلْمَآءِ كُلَّ شَىْءٍ حَىٍّ ﴾

The explanation: (And [We] made – of water – every living thing.)

---

(1) In Beirut museum, there are fossils of fishes discovered in one of Beirut mountains, which indicate that, in ancient times, that mountain was under the sea surface; those fishes swam above its ground, then when the earth surface contracted, its surface was broken, so that some of its layers rose up and some others were depressed, because of its contraction, so that the high [layers] formed these mountains.

Then God - be exalted – created animals, birds and human beings, out of those decayed substances [present on those mountains.] After that, these creatures descended from those mountains and scattered throughout the Earth, and started to reproduce until they filled the Earth.

Therefore, life is transmissible from one planet to another.

God - be exalted – created Adam and Eve on one of those mountains, which had in the past broken up, then they descended from the mountain to the plain land, reproduced and scattered throughout the Earth.

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 2: 35

﴿وَقُلْنَا يَـٰٓـَٔادَمُ ٱسْكُنْ أَنتَ وَزَوْجُكَ ٱلْجَنَّةَ وَكُلَا مِنْهَا رَغَدًا حَيْثُ شِئْتُمَا وَلَا تَقْرَبَا هَـٰذِهِ ٱلشَّجَرَةَ فَتَكُونَا مِنَ ٱلظَّـٰلِمِينَ ﴿٣٥﴾﴾

The explanation: (And We said, 'O Adam, dwell together with your wife in the garden, and eat you [both] amply [of the fruits] thereof where you will; but approach not this tree lest you should then become the wrongdoers.)

The 'garden', here, is that garden which was on the mountain.

Moreover, God – be highly exalted - said in the Quran, 23: 19

﴿لَكُمْ بِهِۦ جَنَّـٰتٍ مِّن نَّخِيلٍ وَأَعْنَـٰبٍ﴾

The explanation: (And We produce for you thereby gardens of date-palms and grapes.)

The garden, where Adam was dwelling, was on one of those mountains, as has-previously- been mentioned; the indication of that is His saying – be exalted – in the Quran, 20: 123

﴿قَالَ ٱهْبِطَا مِنْهَا جَمِيعًۢا بَعْضُكُمْ لِبَعْضٍ عَدُوٌّ﴾

The explanation: (Said He, 'Get down, both of you, altogether, out of it, each of you an enemy to the other.)

The explanation: Descend, both of you, from the mountain to the plain land; for the 'descence' means to come down from a

high to a low place, like His saying – be exalted – in the Quran, 11: 48, telling about the story of Noah:

﴿قِيلَ يَـٰنُوحُ ٱهْبِطْ بِسَلَـٰمٍ مِّنَّا وَبَرَكَـٰتٍ عَلَيْكَ وَعَلَىٰٓ أُمَمٍ مِّمَّن مَّعَكَ﴾

The explanation: ([Then after the ship or the Ark settled on the mountain,] it was said [by the angels,] 'O Noah, descend [from the mountain to the plain land] in safety [granted] by Us and blessings [from Us] on you and on [some] nations of those [of the black and yellow races] who are with you [in the Ark,]')

So, the 'descence' of Noah, actually, was from the mountain to the plain land; because the Ark rested on the mountain of Judi.

God – be exalted – created Adam and Eve from those decayed substances which were on the mountain [on which the garden was.] God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 15: 28

﴿وَإِذْ قَالَ رَبُّكَ لِلْمَلَـٰٓئِكَةِ إِنِّى خَـٰلِقٌۢ بَشَرًا مِّن صَلْصَـٰلٍ مِّنْ حَمَإٍ مَّسْنُونٍ ﴿٢٨﴾﴾

The explanation: (Behold! Your Lord [O Mohammed] said to the angels: "I am about to create man [: Adam], from a black putrid clay.")

In addition to that, Adam was not the first human being whom God created on the Earth, but God had created much many human beings before him that are even uncountable. This fact is indicated by His saying – be exalted – in the Quran, 2: 30

﴿وَإِذْ قَالَ رَبُّكَ لِلْمَلَـٰٓئِكَةِ إِنِّى جَاعِلٌ فِى ٱلْأَرْضِ خَلِيفَةً قَالُوٓا۟ أَتَجْعَلُ فِيهَا مَن يُفْسِدُ فِيهَا وَيَسْفِكُ ٱلدِّمَآءَ وَنَحْنُ نُسَبِّحُ بِحَمْدِكَ وَنُقَدِّسُ لَكَ قَالَ إِنِّىٓ أَعْلَمُ مَا لَا تَعْلَمُونَ ﴿٣٠﴾﴾

The explanation: (And remember [O Mohammed] when your Lord said to the angels: " I am about to place a successor in the earth"; they said, "Will You place therein one who will do

evil therein and shed blood, while we celebrate Your praise and sanctify You?" Said [the Lord], "I know what you know not.")

A 'successor' is one who succeeds or comes after those who were before him, like His saying – be exalted – in the Quran, 10: 14

﴿ثُمَّ جَعَلْنَٰكُمْ خَلَٰٓئِفَ فِى ٱلْأَرْضِ مِنۢ بَعْدِهِمْ لِنَنظُرَ كَيْفَ تَعْمَلُونَ ﴿١٤﴾﴾

The explanation: (Then We have made you successors in the earth after them, to see how you will act [righteousness or corruption.])

Truly, if there were no human beings before Adam, then God wouldn't call him a successor. The second indication is that the angels said: ("Will You place therein one who will do evil therein and shed blood); because the angels do not know the hidden fore-future, then how could they know that Adam's children will become bad and shed blood, but that they had seen those human beings, before Adam, do such deeds?

Not all of the human beings, present nowadays on Our Earth, are Adam' descendants, but actually they descended from four persons; one of them was Adam: our father; the second was the father of Negroes; the third was the father of Red Indians; and the fourth was the father of the Chinese.

Those who were in the Ark together with Noah belonged to the four human races, and not all of them were from Adam. This is confirmed by His saying – be highly exalted – in the Quran, 11: 48

﴿قِيلَ يَٰنُوحُ ٱهْبِطْ بِسَلَٰمٍ مِّنَّا وَبَرَكَٰتٍ عَلَيْكَ وَعَلَىٰٓ أُمَمٍ مِّمَّن مَّعَكَ﴾

The explanation: (It was said, 'O Noah, descend in safety [granted by Us] and blessings from Us on you and [some] nations of those [of the black and yellow races] who are with you [in the Ark.])

The interpretation: The meteorites, which carried life to our Earth, were four and from four broken up planets, so that each one of those meteorites fell down on one part of the Earth,

then God – be exalted – created from each meteorite one human race. For this reason, mankinds are four races:

(1) The Black Race: Its individuals are identified by their wrinkled hair, black skin, broad and flattened nose, thick lips, bulging eyes and big teeth. They are the inhabitants of middle and South Africa, Tasmania, Australia and Philippine.

(2) The Mongolian Race: They have black smooth hair, yellowish skin, round face, with bulging cheeks, small nose, deep-seated eyes, medium-sized teeth. They are the inhabitants of the middle and northern Asia, Turkistan, the Eskimo and the Malayan Islands.

(3) The Red Race: They are Red Indians; the original inhabitants of America.

(4) The Caucasian Race: Its individuals are characterized by soft hair or little bit wrinkled: blond or black; and white or brown skin; complete beards; non- bulging cheeks; medium-sized nose; and small teeth. They are the inhabitants of Europe, Northern Africa, Western and Southern Asia.

Therefore, it is only the Caucasian Race that are Adam's descendents, while the previous three races: each one of them has, particularly, a specific one father. The Glorious God had created those three races thousands of years before He created Adam; for this reason Adam became [their] successor; i.e. God -be exalted – created Adam after them. This is confirmed by His saying -be highly exalted – in the Quran, 11: 48; telling the story of Noah:

﴿قِيلَ يَٰنُوحُ ٱهْبِطْ بِسَلَٰمٍ مِّنَّا وَبَرَكَٰتٍ عَلَيْكَ وَعَلَىٰٓ أُمَمٍ مِّمَّن مَّعَكَ ۚ وَأُمَمٌ
سَنُمَتِّعُهُمْ ثُمَّ يَمَسُّهُم مِّنَّا عَذَابٌ أَلِيمٌ ﴿٤٨﴾﴾

The explanation: (It was said, 'O Noah, descend in safety [granted by Us] and blessings from Us on you and [some] nations of those [of the black and yellow races] who are with you [in the Ark,] but [some other] nations [in other countries of

the earth that the deluge did not reach,] We shall allow them to enjoy prosperity [with wealth and children in the life of the World], and then there will touch them, from Us, a painful torment [according to their disbelief and association with God.])

The explanation:

- (And [on some] nations of those [of the black and yellow races] who are with you [in the Ark]), means: and on some of the other races that went with you in the Ark; some of them were of the black race, and some of the yellow race.

The Children of Adam married some of the daughters of the Chinese and the daughters of the black race; this is confirmed by His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 25: 54

﴿ وَهُوَ ٱلَّذِى خَلَقَ مِنَ ٱلْمَآءِ بَشَرًا فَجَعَلَهُۥ نَسَبًا وَصِهْرًا ۗ وَكَانَ رَبُّكَ قَدِيرًا ﴿٥٤﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And it is He Who created from water a human [race], and made for [this human race] relations of lineage and marriage; for your Lord has power [over all things.])[1]

(and made for [this human race] relations of lineage and marriage): the lineages are your kindred related to your father; and the relations of marriage are your kindred related to your mother.

So the Children of Adam have their lineage from Adam, but they married some of the other races, and mixed; some of them married some of the daughters of the Chinese: the yellow race, and became related to them by marriage; and some of them married some of the black race, and become related to them by marriage. [But all of them are human beings], the most honored among them is the one warding off God's disobedience most.

(1) This also is the meaning of the word in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 55: 17

﴿ رَبُّ ٱلْمَشْرِقَيْنِ وَرَبُّ ٱلْمَغْرِبَيْنِ ﴿١٧﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (Lord of the two [human races, the white and the yellow, in the] East, and the Lord of the two [human races, the black and the red, in the] West.)

Question: If mankind are four races, and that not all of them are descendents of Adam; then what is the meaning of His saying – be exalted – in the Quran, 4: 1

﴿ يَٰٓأَيُّهَا ٱلنَّاسُ ٱتَّقُوا۟ رَبَّكُمُ ٱلَّذِى خَلَقَكُم مِّن نَّفْسٍ وَٰحِدَةٍ وَخَلَقَ مِنْهَا زَوْجَهَا ﴾

The explanation: (O mankind, safeguard [yourselves] against [the punishment of] your Lord, Who created you from one soul, and created of its [likeness] its mate.)?

Answer: The preaching – at the start of Mohammed's mission – was concerning only the tribe of Quraish, but not all the inhabitants of the earth as a whole.

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 26: 214

﴿ وَأَنذِرْ عَشِيرَتَكَ ٱلْأَقْرَبِينَ ﴿٢١٤﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And [O Mohammed] warn [about that] your tribe of near kindred.)

Then God –be exalted – said in the Quran, 6: 92

﴿ وَلِتُنذِرَ أُمَّ ٱلْقُرَىٰ وَمَنْ حَوْلَهَا ﴾

The explanation: (That [you, Mohammed,] may warn the capital of the cities [: Mecca] and those [dwelling] round about her.)

The indication that the speech was with the Meccan people is His saying – be exalted – in the Quran, 9: 128

﴿ لَقَدْ جَآءَكُمْ رَسُولٌ مِّنْ أَنفُسِكُمْ ﴾

The explanation: ([Now] there has come to you an apostle: being one of you.)

It means: one of your tribesmen who speaks your language, and dwells with you in your town; then why do you reject his preaching, while – actually – you know him very well to be 'the truthful' and 'the honest'.

Therefore, the words of God - be exalted – when concerning the Meccans, then He may say: O people! While if the words concern the inhabitants of Medina, then He may say: O believers!

Afterwards, the addressing concerned all the inhabitants of the Hijaz [in Saudi Arabia], then all the Islamic countries, while nowadays it is a warning to all mankind all over the world.

This is confirmed by His saying – be exalted – in the Quran, 17: 70

﴿وَلَقَدْ كَرَّمْنَا بَنِيٓ ءَادَمَ وَحَمَلْنَٰهُمْ فِى ٱلْبَرِّ وَٱلْبَحْرِ وَرَزَقْنَٰهُم مِّنَ ٱلطَّيِّبَٰتِ وَفَضَّلْنَٰهُمْ عَلَىٰ كَثِيرٍ مِّمَّنْ خَلَقْنَا تَفْضِيلًا ﴿٧٠﴾﴾

The explanation: (We have honored the children of Adam, transported them on land and sea, provided them with '[food-stuffs:] pure and wholesome' and preferred them greatly over many of those we created.)

Here, we see that God specified Adam's descendants by favoring them more than the rest of mankind.

If God - be exalted – had meant the favoring of human beings more than animals, then He would have said: We have honored mankind …etc. This is like His saying –be exalted – in the Quran, 74: 29-30

﴿لَوَّاحَةٌ لِّلْبَشَرِ ﴿٢٩﴾ عَلَيْهَا تِسْعَةَ عَشَرَ ﴿٣٠﴾﴾

The explanation: (It is [nowadays] looming to mankind. Imposed upon it [the attraction of] nineteen [planets.])

That is because [stars and celestial] objects are seen by all mankind, and not only by Adam's descendents.

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 25: 48-49

﴿وَأَنزَلْنَا مِنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ مَآءً طَهُورًا ﴿٤٨﴾ لِّنُحْيِىَ بِهِۦ بَلْدَةً مَّيْتًا وَنُسْقِيَهُۥ مِمَّا خَلَقْنَآ أَنْعَٰمًا وَأَنَاسِىَّ كَثِيرًا ﴿٤٩﴾﴾

The explanation: (And We send down, from the sky, purifying water. To quicken therewith a dead land, and to give it for drink to what we have created – the cattle and many folk.)

The word أناسيّ i.e. (many folk) is the plural of ناس i.e. people; therefore, if it were true that all mankind are Adam's descendents, then God – be exalted - might say: And to give it for drink to what We have created – the cattle and large number of people.

The Arabic word إنسي is the singular, which means a mortal or a human being.

God –be exalted –said in the Quran, 19: 26, narrating the talking of the Christ with his mother Mary:

﴿فَقُولِىٓ إِنِّى نَذَرْتُ لِلرَّحْمَٰنِ صَوْمًا فَلَنْ أُكَلِّمَ ٱلْيَوْمَ إِنسِيًّا ﴿٢٦﴾﴾

The explanation: (And if you should see any mortal, say, "I have vowed to the Most Gracious a fast, and today I will not speak to any human being.")

If God – be celebrated His praise – preferred all mankind to the rest of His creatures, then He would not make difference between the free man and the slave; in His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 2: 178

﴿يَٰٓأَيُّهَا ٱلَّذِينَ ءَامَنُوا۟ كُتِبَ عَلَيْكُمُ ٱلْقِصَاصُ فِى ٱلْقَتْلَى ۖ ٱلْحُرُّ بِٱلْحُرِّ وَٱلْعَبْدُ بِٱلْعَبْدِ وَٱلْأُنثَىٰ بِٱلْأُنثَىٰ﴾

The explanation: (O believers, retaliation is prescribed for you concerning the slain: the free man for the free man, the slave for the slave, the female for the female)

Therefore, God -be exalted – made a difference, in punishment, between the free one and the slave.

Question: What is meant by His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 2: 260

﴿ وَإِذْ قَالَ إِبْرَٰهِـۧمُ رَبِّ أَرِنِى كَيْفَ تُحْىِ ٱلْمَوْتَىٰ ۖ قَالَ أَوَلَمْ تُؤْمِن ۖ قَالَ بَلَىٰ وَلَٰكِن لِّيَطْمَئِنَّ قَلْبِى ۖ قَالَ فَخُذْ أَرْبَعَةً مِّنَ ٱلطَّيْرِ فَصُرْهُنَّ إِلَيْكَ ثُمَّ ٱجْعَلْ عَلَىٰ كُلِّ جَبَلٍ مِّنْهُنَّ جُزْءًا ثُمَّ ٱدْعُهُنَّ يَأْتِينَكَ سَعْيًا ۚ وَٱعْلَمْ أَنَّ ٱللَّهَ عَزِيزٌ حَكِيمٌ ﴿٢٦٠﴾ ﴾

The explanation: ([Remember] when Abraham said [to his Lord]: "My Lord, make it obviously clear to me how You give life to the dead." [God] said: "Do you not believe [that I am All-Able?"] [Abraham] said: "Yes [, I do,] but [I ask] in order that my heart may be assured."

[His Lord] said: "Take four [kinds] of birds [: the poultry that walk on their feet but cannot fly: the chicken, the duck, the Indian chicken and the peacock;] and make them incline[1] to you [by giving them food and calling them to the food;] then place a part of them [:one of these four] on each hill [that are round about you], then call them; they will come to you [walking on their feet] in haste; and know that God is All-Mighty [and] Most Wise.")

Answer:

- ("My Lord, make it obviously clear to me) means: Let me understand (how you give life to the dead." [God] said: "Do you not believe [that I am All-Able?"]) Means: Haven't you believed yet?
- (Abraham] said: "Yes [, I do,]) or I have believed, (but [I ask] in order that my heart may be assured.") according to what you will show to me.
- ([His Lord] said: "Take four [kinds] of birds [:the poultry that walk on their feet but cannot fly: the chicken, the duck, the Indian chicken and the peacock;]); of each kind one bird,

(1) i.e. team them to turn to you when you call them to food.

- (And make them incline to you [by giving them food and calling them to the food;]); the meaning: make them familiar with you, that is by giving them food for many days, until they become familiar with you; i.e. team them to turn to you when you call them to food; so that when you call them, they come to you in haste; i.e. let them return to you when you call them. The birds, which Abraham took, were of those, [domestic birds], living at homes like the hen, the duck, the peacock and the Indian cock.
- (Then place a part of them [:one of these four] on each hill [that are round about you])
- (Then call them; they will come to you [walking on their feet] in haste); that is because they have become familiar with eating and drinking after you call them.

This is a parable told by God to Abraham, which means: God -be exalted – says to Abraham:

Souls will not perish, and bodies will not be resurrected or returned to life again, but souls will be gathered and judged, because souls are everlasting, and no defect or disturbance will affect souls; and on the Day of Judgment, the angel Israfel will call them, and they will hear his call, and gather to the caller in haste, just as when you call the birds they come in haste.

This is similar in meaning to His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 17: 52

﴿ يَوْمَ يَدْعُوكُمْ فَتَسْتَجِيبُونَ بِحَمْدِهِۦ وَتَظُنُّونَ إِن لَّبِثْتُمْ إِلَّا قَلِيلًا ﴿٥٢﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (The day when he will call you, and you will respond – with His praise – and will think that you have tarried but a little-while.)

God - be exalted – said also in the Quran, 30: 25

﴿ وَمِنْ ءَايَٰتِهِۦٓ أَن تَقُومَ ٱلسَّمَآءُ وَٱلْأَرْضُ بِأَمْرِهِۦ ۚ
ثُمَّ إِذَا دَعَاكُمْ دَعْوَةً مِّنَ ٱلْأَرْضِ إِذَآ أَنتُمْ تَخْرُجُونَ ﴿٢٥﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (And of His signs is this, that the heavens and the earth perform [their designed functions] by His command [and wisdom], then when [the angel Israfel] will call you [people], then from the earth you shall come forth.)

Question: Why did the Lord specify the birds by this parable, and not other kinds of animals, and why did He specify four of them only?

Answer: God -be exalted – specified the birds which cannot fly like: the hen, the peacock and the rest; because, due to the heaviness of his body, man cannot fly, like the soul, in the space. Just like the hen, which cannot fly because of the heaviness of its body. In addition to that, He specified only four of the birds because mankinds are four races, so that each kind of the birds resembles one of the human races.

Meteors

Meteors are of the same kind as meteorites, but they contain much of the inflammable materials like sulfur, phosphorus, sodium, potassium and magnesium. When these objects are stricken by some other objects, or touched by another substance, which combines with them, those inflammable materials will burn.

Examples:

(1) When sodium and potassium come in contact with water, they will inflame due to their severe reaction with water.

(2) When magnesium and sulfur are touched by fire or an electric spark in the atmosphere, they will inflame.

(3) When phosphorus comes in contact with oxygen, it will inflame.

Therefore, meteors have at least one of these elements, so that if the meteor comes in contact with something that that element has an affinity to combine with; like water, fire or oxygen, then it will inflame and fall down to the earth, or it will be smashed and broken up in the space into very tiny pieces

before will it reach the ground. The reason for its falling down is that its inflammation makes it a hot object after being cold, and it becomes an attracting object after being an attracted one. Then it will try to pull the Earth, but it cannot because the Earth is a big object while the meteor is very tiny in relation to the Earth, so it will fall down upon it. Meteors are those, which we see at night, burning in the sky and a light is projected from it like a tall rope. They are mentioned in the Quran, 37: 10

﴿إِلَّا مَنْ خَطِفَ ٱلْخَطْفَةَ فَأَتْبَعَهُۥ شِهَابٌ ثَاقِبٌ ۝١٠﴾

The explanation: (Except [such devil] who snatched some snatching[1] [from the angels] and was then pursued by a flashing meteor.)

It means: a flaming meteor.

Also, God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 72: 8

﴿وَأَنَّا لَمَسْنَا ٱلسَّمَآءَ فَوَجَدْنَٰهَا مُلِئَتْ حَرَسًا شَدِيدًا وَشُهُبًا ۝٨﴾

The explanation: ([The genies or demons, who listened to the Quran, said:] And [we had ascended up in the space until] we had touched the [ethereal or spiritual] heaven [with our hands,] but had found it filled with stern guards [: angels] and meteors [under that heaven.])

Frequently, God destroyed and ruined the unbelieving nations by meteors, meteorites and comets in the ancient times, e.g. Lot's people; they were destroyed by earthquake, then God cleft the earth open with them, so that the upper parts of their buildings became lower, and water flooded their homes. That cleavage then became a lake due to its deep depression, and it became a drainage place for rainwater. God – be exalted destroyed the rest of them by rocks of meteors and meteorites. That lake is still present nowadays, and is called the 'Lake of

(1) i.e. so that he overheard a news from the angels, and that was in the past, but nowadays [:at the time of the revelation of the Quran], he cannot overhear any news from the angels in heaven.

Lot's people', or the 'Dead Sea'. It is surrounded by [a large number of] rocks of the meteorites.

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 11, 82

﴿فَلَمَّا جَآءَ أَمْرُنَا جَعَلْنَا عَٰلِيَهَا سَافِلَهَا وَأَمْطَرْنَا عَلَيْهَا حِجَارَةً مِّن سِجِّيلٍ مَّنضُودٍ ﴿٨٢﴾﴾

The explanation: (And when Our decree issued [concerning the punishment of Lot' people], We made the high parts [of their houses] their low parts.(1) And We rained down upon them the packed sedimentary stones, marked [: having marks from their origin by sedimentation], with [the knowledge of your Lord(2)[O Mohammed.] And they are never far from the transgressors.(3))

Moreover, God – be highly exalted - said in the Quran, 34: 9

﴿إِن نَّشَأْ نَخْسِفْ بِهِمُ ٱلْأَرْضَ أَوْ نُسْقِطْ عَلَيْهِمْ كِسَفًا مِّنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ ۚ إِنَّ فِى ذَٰلِكَ لَءَايَةً لِّكُلِّ عَبْدٍ مُّنِيبٍ ﴿٩﴾﴾

The explanation: (If We will, we may cleave the land open with them, or make to fall upon them [some] fragments from the sky. Surely, in that is an indicative sign [of Our might] for every devoted servant [that turns to God in repentance and obedience.])

The 'fragments', here, means the meteorites.

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 52: 44

﴿وَإِن يَرَوْا۟ كِسْفًا مِّنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ سَاقِطًا يَقُولُوا۟ سَحَابٌ مَّرْكُومٌ ﴿٤٤﴾﴾

The explanation: (But if they see [some] heavenly fragments falling down, they will say: " [It is only some] accumulating clouds.")

---

(1) i.e. because of the earthquake, their houses were collapsed with them, so they were buried under the wreck.

(2) i.e. God knows well about their place and time.

(3) i.e. the Abyssinians who intended to destroy the Sacred Mosque at Mecca, when God rained upon them pebbles carried by the birds. That incident was not remote in time from the Meccans who remembered it very well.

Question: If the meteors were, really, falling down to the ground when do they burn? And they might fall in one direction; then why do we see them fall right-side one time, and left side another time?

Answer: There are rocks floating in the space [i.e. the meteorites], which are cold. Now the meteor is a flaming and hot object; so it tries to pull these rocks, but it cannot because these meteorites have larger sizes; so they attract the meteors; therefore, they deviate one time towards the right, and another time towards the left, according to the position of such rocks. This is because there will be a gravitational pulling or attraction between the cold and the hot objects.

The Earthquake and Cleavage

Earthquakes and volcanoes occur because of the gases present inside the Earth, under high pressure. These gases issue from the fire that burns inside the core of the Earth. The gases rush but cannot find an exit, so the Earth surface will tremble and quake, and the severity of this quaking is related to the degree of that pressure. But when there is much of the liquefied materials in the core of the Earth, they will try to get out, and when the crust of the Earth yields, then the volcano will erupt.

The earthquake may be followed by a cleavage, so that an area of the earth at that site cleaves down. When the cleavage is deep, then the water-springs will emerge and will flood that cleavage (or depression); the water may increase in amount until it will cover all that area.

In ancient times, God -be exalted – destroyed many of the disbelieving nations by earthquakes, cleavages and volcanoes, because of their disbelieving. Among those were Lot's people whom God -be exalted – destroyed by earthquake and cleavage, so that their country became a lake due to the large amounts of water, which covered that cleavage. The lake is still present nowadays; it is called the 'Dead Sea', or the 'Lake of Lot's people', which is found nowadays in Palestine.

Among those disbelieving people also, were Salih's people and Shuaib's people, whom God -be exalted – destroyed by the earthquakes. God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 7: 77-78

﴿فَعَقَرُوا۟ ٱلنَّاقَةَ وَعَتَوْا۟ عَنْ أَمْرِ رَبِّهِمْ وَقَالُوا۟ يَٰصَٰلِحُ ٱئْتِنَا بِمَا تَعِدُنَآ إِن كُنتَ مِنَ ٱلْمُرْسَلِينَ ﴿٧٧﴾ فَأَخَذَتْهُمُ ٱلرَّجْفَةُ فَأَصْبَحُوا۟ فِى دَارِهِمْ جَٰثِمِينَ ﴿٧٨﴾﴾

The explanation:

(77-Then they [: Salih's people] hamstrung [and slaughtered] the she-camel[1], and rebelled against the commandment of their Lord, and said: 'O Salih, bring upon us [the punishment] with which you are threatening us, if you [indeed] are a messenger [of God.]' 78- so the [earth-] quake seized them, and in the morning they were fallen prostrate [: dead under the wreck] in their habitations.)

About Shuaib's people, God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 7: 90-91

﴿وَقَالَ ٱلْمَلَأُ ٱلَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا۟ مِن قَوْمِهِۦ لَئِنِ ٱتَّبَعْتُمْ شُعَيْبًا إِنَّكُمْ إِذًا لَّخَٰسِرُونَ ﴿٩٠﴾ فَأَخَذَتْهُمُ ٱلرَّجْفَةُ فَأَصْبَحُوا۟ فِى دَارِهِمْ جَٰثِمِينَ﴾

The explanation: (And the chieftains of his people, who were disbelieving, said: if you follow Shuaib, then truly you shall lose. So the [earth-] quake seized them, and morning found them prostrate [: dead] in their habitation.)

In the present time, a large number of people have been destroyed by the earthquakes, cleavages and volcanoes.

Examples:

(1) Spain was afflicted by earthquake at 1884, when seven hundred houses were destroyed in Granada, and more than 2000 persons died.

---

(1) The she-camel was the miracle of Prophet Salih. She drank their water for one whole day, and provided them with milk sufficient for all of them.

(2) Japan was afflicted by earthquake at 1891, so that more than 4000 houses were collapsed, and more than 8000 persons died.

(3) In the year 1894, water flooded some areas in Japan, because of the earthquake, and that led to the drowning of thousands of people.

(4) In the year 1902, Keshinger of Turkistan was quaked, so that about three thousand persons died.

(5) In the year 1908, Messina defile in Italy was quaked so it was ruined. In addition to that, Missina in Sicily and Rigio in Italy were destroyed [by earthquake], causing the death of thousands of people, while other thousands became without any shelter.

(6) A terrible earthquake occurred in Japan, on 3/ Sept./ 1923, which was a true disaster that afflicted the country, when the mountains were shaken, then the seas flooded and the houses were collapsed upon them. Finally, Yokohama city was ruined; and Tokyo the beautiful capital was burnt with fire. In Yokohama alone, more than one thousand persons were killed, other than those killed in Tokyo.

(7) The Ahram newspaper mentioned on Sunday, the 26th. /July 1930, under the title of:

"The Earthquake Disaster of Italy

"The news, received today from the earthquake areas, indicated the widespread effect of the disaster and its great damages; for the houses in 18 districts were destroyed: in the states of Avellino, Bari, Nenivo, Comboyosho, Foggia, Naples and Shalerno. There are 142 towns afflicted by much damage; the official news indicated that the number of those killed was about 1883, but unfortunately this number will increase as much as more corpses are being taken from under the wreck. This work is being carried out slowly, due to the large number of damaged and collapsed houses, and because of the bad condition of roads and transport in some areas. There are houses, severely

damaged so that they are liable to fall down every now and then, as did it happen to the building of Molveno prison, from which the prisoners were transported to Foggia.

Duke Drust and Dukest Yoel arrived at Avellino to visit the afflicted places. The king, too, traveled yesterday from Konea, and crossed – at afternoon by a special train – the region of Foggia. After being acquainted about the recent news regarding the condition of the damaged districts, he continued his journey to Mulphy. His visit was encouraging to the citizens there; and their meeting with him was so impressive.

The government will meet to discuss the essential measures that should be undertaken in such circumstances."

--Rome, on 26th./July (From the correspondent reporter of the Ahram newspaper) :

" It is estimated – according to the news coming from the areas ruined by the earthquake – that 2142 individuals were killed and 4551 injured. The search must be carried on in the afflicted regions, which they couldn't search because of the bad weather and because of the difficulty of communications; therefore, the final figures of the damage and losses will be much greater than what has been already mentioned, and still it cannot be exactly estimated.

Till now, there is a large number of destroyed houses; but, moreover, there are more houses in need of wrecking. It is decided that those, who escaped the earthquake, should not dwell in wood huts but in tents, to await for the reconstruction of their houses which were damaged by the earthquake."

-- Rome, on 27th. /July (From the correspondent reporter of the Ahram newspaper):

"A new disaster has afflicted Italy, while it is still suffering from her calamity at Naples; for a violent storm has arisen at Milan, Venice and Trevisia district; afflicting them with much damage. The number of those killed in Trevisia district alone were 22, and the injured were more than 100. The

communications were disconnected between the afflicted and other areas. It is impossible to estimate the number of the victims and the destroyed houses; actually, the damage which afflicted Milan and Venice was tremendous."

[The following incidents and observations are collected by the translator:

8- Later on, many earthquakes happened, in different parts of the world, with destructive consequences on people and their houses and property; of these were:

A- the coast of Chile in 1960. Casualties included about 5,700 killed and 3,000 injured, and property damage amounted to many millions of dollars. Seismic sea waves excited by the earthquake caused death and destruction in Hawaii, Japan, and the Pacific coast of the United States.

B- On March 27, 1964, a great earthquake with a Richter magnitude 8.3–8.5 (see below) occurred in south central Alaska. . It released at least twice as much energy as the 1906 San Francisco earthquake and was felt on land over an area of almost 1,300,000 square kilometers. The death toll was only 131 because of the low density of the state's population, but property damage was very high. The earthquake tilted an area of at least 120,000 square kilometers. Landmasses were thrust up locally as high as 25 meters to the east of a line extending northeastward from Kodiak Island through the western part of Prince William Sound. To the west, land sank as much as 2.5 meters. Extensive damage in coastal areas resulted from submarine landslides and tsunamis. Tsunami damage occurred as far away as Crescent City, Calif. The occurrence of tens of thousands of aftershocks indicates that the region of faulting extended about 1,000 kilometers.

C- The coal-mining and industrial city of T'ang-shan, about 110 kilometers to the east of Peking, was

almost deleted in the tragic earthquake of July 28, 1976. The death toll exceeded 240,000 persons, and probably some other 500,000 were injured. Most persons were killed during their sleep after the collapse of the houses that were not reinforced in construction.

D- Mexico

The main shock occurred at 7:18 AM on Sept. 19, 1985. The cause was a fault slip along the Benioff zone (a band of intermediate- and deep-earthquake foci along a planar dipping zone) under the Pacific coast of Mexico. Although 400 kilometers from the epicenter, Mexico City suffered major building damage and more than 10,000 of its inhabitants were reported killed. The highest intensity was in the central city, which is founded on a former lakebed. The ground motion there measured five times that in the outlying districts, which have different soil foundations.

E- There was successive earthquakes following just after the latest total eclipse of the sun. These earthquakes occurred in the same zone of the shadow of the total eclipse of the sun. - The translator.]

These incidents, we think, are sufficient examples of the great harm of earthquakes, whether to persons, buildings or cities. In this instance, we mention His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 16: 118

﴿ وَمَا ظَلَمْنَٰهُمْ وَلَٰكِن كَانُوٓاْ أَنفُسَهُمْ يَظْلِمُونَ ﴿١١٨﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (We did not wrong them, but they were wont to wrong their own selves.)

And God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 11: 117

﴿ وَمَا كَانَ رَبُّكَ لِيُهْلِكَ ٱلْقُرَىٰ بِظُلْمٍ وَأَهْلُهَا مُصْلِحُونَ ﴿١١٧﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (Nor would your Lord [O Mohammed] destroy the cities unjustly when their people being reformers [acting righteously.])

Volcanoes

The volcano erupts from a crack in the earth crust, which bursts so that the stones, molten lava, gases and liquids come out from it; these will collect on the earth surface to form a cone-shaped mountain, which is usually high, with a crater at its top; this crater reaches actually down to the core of the earth. There may be more than one crater for the volcano; e.g. Athens volcano has more than 80 craters.

The cause of the eruption of the volcano is the great heat present in the core of the earth; that heat which melts the materials, causes the evaporation of water, converts the solid into liquid and the liquid into vapors and gases, so that these substances will expand because of the heat, till they break the crust of the earth, and find an exit to emerge to the outside.

The liquid materials, gases and lava will be thrown from the core of the earth to a great height, then those vapors will convert into a heavy rain, which may become a great flood that overwhelms the country; as it once happened in Sicily.

When the volcano erupts, we hear a loud crepitating and crackle in the atmosphere and inside the earth, and some loud sounds like the thunder. Then big masses of stones will be thrown up, fire will inflame and people will be terrified.

The amounts of lava, ejected by the volcano eruption are beyond imagination; e.g.:

(1) The lava that came out from Tempo volcano in Java, in the year 1815 covered the sea surface within a circle with a diameter of about 200 miles. This is sufficient to cover all Italy with a layer of lava of about two and a half feet high.

(2) Vesuvius volcano erupted in Italy, in the year 79 BC, so it covered the two cities of Pompeii and Herculaneum.

(3) A volcano erupted also in Kerketna island near Java, between it and Sumatra; it destroyed all the island except a small remaining part.

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 6:65

﴿قُلْ هُوَ ٱلْقَادِرُ عَلَىٰٓ أَن يَبْعَثَ عَلَيْكُمْ عَذَابًا مِّن فَوْقِكُمْ أَوْ مِن تَحْتِ أَرْجُلِكُمْ أَوْ يَلْبِسَكُمْ شِيَعًا وَيُذِيقَ بَعْضَكُم بَأْسَ بَعْضٍ ۗ ٱنظُرْ كَيْفَ نُصَرِّفُ ٱلْءَايَٰتِ لَعَلَّهُمْ يَفْقَهُونَ ﴿٦٥﴾﴾

The explanation: (Say: He is the All-Able to send forth upon you [, associaters,] chastisement from above you or from under your feet, or to confuse you in sects and to make you suffer of the violence of one another. Behold [, O Mohammed,] how we turn about the revelations; haply that they may understand.)

The explanation:

- (To send forth upon you [, associaters,] chastisement from above you) means: meteorites, thunderbolts, meteors and comets; because these come from above.
- (Or from under your feet) means: the earthquake, the cleavage, the volcano and the drowning [in the flood]; because these come from under their feet.
- (Or to confuse you in sects and to make you suffer of the violence of one another.) He means by that the division and hostility among them and wars; e.g. the two world wars which caused the death of millions of people.

This is a story of a volcano which erupted in the year 1943, as detailed in the Reader's Digest magazine, the Arabic edition, Jan. 1944:

"Michoacán Volcano

Duenezeo Poledo is a freed slave farmer; he bought a small farm in the state of Michoacan, some 180 miles to the west of the New Mexico city.

On Saturday evening of the 20th/Feb./1943, he had completed the cultivation of his land and stopped to rest for a while. Suddenly, he saw a pillar of whitish smoke ascending from inside the middle of his land, twisting up like a snake, about 50-60 cubits from him.

Many strange events were taking place the whole of that day; for early in the morning, the land quaked violently, then – during cultivation – he felt the soil more hot to his bare feet than usual, then – after all – came that strange smoke. But when he proceeded to see what it was, he heard a crackling, like the sound heard when the cork of a large bottle is unlocked.

Afterwards, that pillar of smoke became thicker and rose up in the sky, so Deunezeo ran back – amid the crops – to take his wife. But Poledo's family never saw their land again; because while Deunezeo was hurrying his astonished and worried wife to come, there came a violent earthquake that was recorded by the specific instruments at New York 2250 miles away.

Deunezeo saw, after regaining his consciousness and getting up from under the wreck of his collapsed hut, he saw the crops of maize burning while big stones and tons of soils were thrown up in the sky.

Poledo's family, then found their way with difficulty, through a land shaking under their feet towards the nearby Paricutin village, but they found it destroyed. The road was crowded with terrified people running for safety; blankets and sheets were mixed up with other clothes; the luggage were heaped on the carriages, while the priest was calling the strong men to rescue the statue. Paricutin village has never been veiled by night once again; because the volcano, which previously was the farm of Deunezeo Poledo, by now, was lightening the area by its flame, in addition to the thick suffocating smoke of sulfur vapors. The fire flames were rushing in the air, and large amounts of rocks, whitened by the severe heat, were continuously thrown up for one thousand feet in the air. Simultaneously, there were many violent explosions by which the earth quaked and trembled. The loud sound and noise was uninterrupted as if there were hundreds of guns fired simultaneously. This is according to the report of the official agencies.

The grey clouds of ash, fire and black particles reached the surfaces of houses at New Mexico City, some 180 miles away.

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 6:65

﴿قُلْ هُوَ ٱلْقَادِرُ عَلَىٰٓ أَن يَبْعَثَ عَلَيْكُمْ عَذَابًا مِّن فَوْقِكُمْ أَوْ مِن تَحْتِ أَرْجُلِكُمْ أَوْ يَلْبِسَكُمْ شِيَعًا وَيُذِيقَ بَعْضَكُم بَأْسَ بَعْضٍ ۗ ٱنظُرْ كَيْفَ نُصَرِّفُ ٱلْآيَٰتِ لَعَلَّهُمْ يَفْقَهُونَ ﴿٦٥﴾﴾

The explanation: (Say: He is the All-Able to send forth upon you [, associaters,] chastisement from above you or from under your feet, or to confuse you in sects and to make you suffer of the violence of one another. Behold [, O Mohammed,] how we turn about the revelations; haply that they may understand.)

The explanation:

- (To send forth upon you [, associaters,] chastisement from above you) means: meteorites, thunderbolts, meteors and comets; because these come from above.
- (Or from under your feet) means: the earthquake, the cleavage, the volcano and the drowning [in the flood]; because these come from under their feet.
- (Or to confuse you in sects and to make you suffer of the violence of one another.) He means by that the division and hostility among them and wars; e.g. the two world wars which caused the death of millions of people.

This is a story of a volcano which erupted in the year 1943, as detailed in the Reader's Digest magazine, the Arabic edition, Jan. 1944:

"Michoacán Volcano

Duenezeo Poledo is a freed slave farmer; he bought a small farm in the state of Michoacan, some 180 miles to the west of the New Mexico city.

On Saturday evening of the 20th/Feb./1943, he had completed the cultivation of his land and stopped to rest for a while. Suddenly, he saw a pillar of whitish smoke ascending from inside the middle of his land, twisting up like a snake, about 50-60 cubits from him.

Many strange events were taking place the whole of that day; for early in the morning, the land quaked violently, then – during cultivation – he felt the soil more hot to his bare feet than usual, then – after all – came that strange smoke. But when he proceeded to see what it was, he heard a crackling, like the sound heard when the cork of a large bottle is unlocked.

Afterwards, that pillar of smoke became thicker and rose up in the sky, so Deunezeo ran back – amid the crops – to take his wife. But Poledo's family never saw their land again; because while Deunezeo was hurrying his astonished and worried wife to come, there came a violent earthquake that was recorded by the specific instruments at New York 2250 miles away.

Deunezeo saw, after regaining his consciousness and getting up from under the wreck of his collapsed hut, he saw the crops of maize burning while big stones and tons of soils were thrown up in the sky.

Poledo's family, then found their way with difficulty, through a land shaking under their feet towards the nearby Paricutin village, but they found it destroyed. The road was crowded with terrified people running for safety; blankets and sheets were mixed up with other clothes; the luggage were heaped on the carriages, while the priest was calling the strong men to rescue the statue. Paricutin village has never been veiled by night once again; because the volcano, which previously was the farm of Deunezeo Poledo, by now, was lightening the area by its flame, in addition to the thick suffocating smoke of sulfur vapors. The fire flames were rushing in the air, and large amounts of rocks, whitened by the severe heat, were continuously thrown up for one thousand feet in the air. Simultaneously, there were many violent explosions by which the earth quaked and trembled. The loud sound and noise was uninterrupted as if there were hundreds of guns fired simultaneously. This is according to the report of the official agencies.

The grey clouds of ash, fire and black particles reached the surfaces of houses at New Mexico City, some 180 miles away.

But following that was a very great terror; for in the third night, the volcano cone was cleft; it was a big hot mass like the red hyacinth (or ruby), and it delivered its first lava stream (i.e. molten rocks and metals); it got out boiling from the earth core, as if thousands of ovens, for melting iron, were burst altogether, swept away from the edges and flowed on the sides in a rushing stream of twenty feet depth, and two hundred feet breadth; it was gradually converting from very bright white to deep red, while it was flowing through the valley, carrying inevitable death to everything in its way.

Officers, geologists, reporters and photographers hastened to the afflicted valley to Deunezeo's farm over the lava crust which had, by that time, started to solidify, after covering the Paricutin village; they approached to the fire curtain surrounding the hell of that farm, and stayed there for many days, studying this strange event; that is the birth of the first volcano in the western hemisphere since the year 1795.

Following the birth of this volcano, its activity somewhat diminished in six periods; each period was followed by a violent explosion that terrified the remote villages. The sixth time was on the 10th./ June, when 'Paricutin' - which is now the name of the volcano – cut a new large cup, some hundred feet from the first cup, and it threw another stream of molten lava in another valley. The stream initially flew one thousand feet a day, but it enlarged, and one month later it enlarged further more, until the speed of it's flowing

Lessened to not more than ten feet a day. These two valleys have now been buried under thick layers of lava, volcanic rocks and ash, while Paricutin volcano itself have become 1200 feet above the level of the plane from which it had erupted, and its width at its base is three quarters of a mile.

When I flight to see the volcano, I observed the destruction caused by the volcano within a distance of 75 miles from it; the black ash now covers what were before some green valleys and viable mountainous sides; but now the gardens and farms are

removed; the buildings and churches are buried; so that you cannot see anything other than few of their towers; and many water springs diminished and receded, while the Cobatzio river became a river of slowly flowing mud.

Then you will see a huge pillar of smoke twisting as it ascends up from the cone of the volcano, which reached incredible height of 20000 feet.

Every four seconds are followed by throwing in the air of new amounts of smoke and tons of rocks roaring in the space; and a huge stream of red-hot lava will erupt to reach a height of 1000 feet, then it pours down along the edge of the cone running in two tunnels. I closed the windows of the airplane to avoid the extreme heat and the rushing hot rocks, but that did not prevent the suffocating sulfur smoke (sulfur dioxide gas) from getting in, which will force you to cough. Actually, the rushing smoke, the rushing rocks (some of them being bigger than the airplane itself) and the flaming lava; all these will make you catch your breath from fear and terror, when the plane gets near to the volcano on its way to land.

We landed in Uruapan: some twenty miles from the volcano. A thick layer of volcanic ash, which becomes a sticky emulsion when the rain falls down on it, has covered this village. There are many ceilings started to yield under the heaviness of the ash collecting over them, which is collecting more rapidly than the farmer's capability to remove.

About 500 persons come daily to observe the volcano; they crowd in the Paricutin region that has officially become a site of tourism. Buses ran to the Uruapan village, but its road - specially the terminal ten miles – is in continuous need for cleaning from the ash that covers it. Tourists will then go by car or on mules to the borders stated by the government to be the borders of a safety area around the volcano, about one mile from the circumference of its base.

At the periphery of this region, there is a village called 'St. Juan Village', beyond which there is nothing save ash, lava,

But following that was a very great terror; for in the third night, the volcano cone was cleft; it was a big hot mass like the red hyacinth (or ruby), and it delivered its first lava stream (i.e. molten rocks and metals); it got out boiling from the earth core, as if thousands of ovens, for melting iron, were burst altogether, swept away from the edges and flowed on the sides in a rushing stream of twenty feet depth, and two hundred feet breadth; it was gradually converting from very bright white to deep red, while it was flowing through the valley, carrying inevitable death to everything in its way.

Officers, geologists, reporters and photographers hastened to the afflicted valley to Deunezeo's farm over the lava crust which had, by that time, started to solidify, after covering the Paricutin village; they approached to the fire curtain surrounding the hell of that farm, and stayed there for many days, studying this strange event; that is the birth of the first volcano in the western hemisphere since the year 1795.

Following the birth of this volcano, its activity somewhat diminished in six periods; each period was followed by a violent explosion that terrified the remote villages. The sixth time was on the 10th./ June, when 'Paricutin' - which is now the name of the volcano – cut a new large cup, some hundred feet from the first cup, and it threw another stream of molten lava in another valley. The stream initially flew one thousand feet a day, but it enlarged, and one month later it enlarged further more, until the speed of it's flowing

Lessened to not more than ten feet a day. These two valleys have now been buried under thick layers of lava, volcanic rocks and ash, while Paricutin volcano itself have become 1200 feet above the level of the plane from which it had erupted, and its width at its base is three quarters of a mile.

When I flight to see the volcano, I observed the destruction caused by the volcano within a distance of 75 miles from it; the black ash now covers what were before some green valleys and viable mountainous sides; but now the gardens and farms are

removed; the buildings and churches are buried; so that you cannot see anything other than few of their towers; and many water springs diminished and receded, while the Cobatzio river became a river of slowly flowing mud.

Then you will see a huge pillar of smoke twisting as it ascends up from the cone of the volcano, which reached incredible height of 20000 feet.

Every four seconds are followed by throwing in the air of new amounts of smoke and tons of rocks roaring in the space; and a huge stream of red-hot lava will erupt to reach a height of 1000 feet, then it pours down along the edge of the cone running in two tunnels. I closed the windows of the airplane to avoid the extreme heat and the rushing hot rocks, but that did not prevent the suffocating sulfur smoke (sulfur dioxide gas) from getting in, which will force you to cough. Actually, the rushing smoke, the rushing rocks (some of them being bigger than the airplane itself) and the flaming lava; all these will make you catch your breath from fear and terror, when the plane gets near to the volcano on its way to land.

We landed in Uruapan: some twenty miles from the volcano. A thick layer of volcanic ash, which becomes a sticky emulsion when the rain falls down on it, has covered this village. There are many ceilings started to yield under the heaviness of the ash collecting over them, which is collecting more rapidly than the farmer's capability to remove.

About 500 persons come daily to observe the volcano; they crowd in the Paricutin region that has officially become a site of tourism. Buses ran to the Uruapan village, but its road - specially the terminal ten miles – is in continuous need for cleaning from the ash that covers it. Tourists will then go by car or on mules to the borders stated by the government to be the borders of a safety area around the volcano, about one mile from the circumference of its base.

At the periphery of this region, there is a village called 'St. Juan Village', beyond which there is nothing save ash, lava,

thunder and wilderness. The Mexican government is certainly convinced that the 'St. Juan Village' will, inevitably, be destroyed; they tried to encourage its inhabitants to migrate therefrom, but they refused, in spite of that they are obliged to struggle against the ash and dust day and night; because they gain large amounts of money, which they had never gained like it before. They gain this money by preparing - for tourists- the food, mules and horses, and by working as the guides and translators.

In the region of about one hundred square miles around the volcano, there is nothing green and not any leaf or grass. Fifty miles away from the volcano, the viable plants have become dry, and nothing lives there except the resistant kinds of the plant, like some trees.

The disaster damaged seven villages, while some others were harmed so that the plant dried in a land which once was very fertile; sparrows may fall still down from the air, and water may rarely be found because the water springs dried up or diminished.

The Minister of Relief sent a team of doctors, nurses and social workers to seek for eight thousand individuals that the erupted volcano had driven them away from their land.

The end has not come yet; for there isn't any indication that the activity of the Paricutin volcano is declining, but on the contrary, the violent eruptions are successively throwing large amounts of hot rocks in the air, which then fall down on the cone of the volcano, so that it becomes higher and higher, and the rate of its increase indicates that the substance erupting from its interior did not diminish; because the lava is still rushing in the air, then it falls down and flows on its sides. Actually, at night, it looks like a 'fire-fall' [compared to a water-fall.] The Mexicans say that 'the hell is still free.'

So this is the story of this volcano, as it is mentioned in the Reader's Digest magazine – the Arabic edition.

Sun

Sun is a flaming spherical object that rotates around itself from right to left, and completes its rotation within 25 days and 5 hours. They discovered its rotation from certain spots on its surface; for they saw these spots moving from right to left and after 25 days and 5 hours they reach their initial position. Therefore, they realized that the sun rotates around itself and completes its rotation within this time.

Astronomers estimated the volume of the Sun to be larger than the Earth by more than one million times, but it is contracting as time passes; its heat is gradually decreasing, and its surface is cooling down, so its volume has decreased; for it has become an old one, and its end has approached. (1)

The Sun is an attracting object for the planets and their satellites, i.e. the moons and the meteorites. All of these are called the 'Solar System.' The sun is stationary (relative to the planets) while the planets revolve around it. The sun originally was a star, then it pulled to it – by gravitation – some of the meteoritic rocks, so that it became a sun; because it started to grow and enlarge by the meteorites pulled to it by gravitation, i.e. it was a star then it became a sun.

Its life will come to an end, exactly as has the life of the previous suns finished(2), when its light will decrease, and its surface will cool within a period of two thousand years, so that it

---

(1) It is narrated that Prophet Mohammed – peace be on him – said that "Hell will go on saying: 'Is there any more [of disbelievers and wrongdoers, to consume them; because it is very big] until the Lord of Glory and Might lets time and ages pass, after which it will shrink.' " The meaning: until long time elapses, so that it will be an old sun, then it will shrink and its surface will cool, and a crust will form.

(2) It is mentioned in the Holy Gospel according to St. Matthew, chapter 24: "And immediately after the tribulation of those days, the sun shall be darkened and the moon shall not give her light and the stars shall fall down from heaven and the powers of heaven shall be moved." [The exact word in the origin means: the power of heaven shall be disturbed or weakened.] It means: the gravitation shall be weakened.

will be an earth, then it will burst and become nineteen pieces, which will be attracted by gravitation to the nearest sun to them. Those pieces will become new planets, after the complete cooling of their surfaces, and those new planets will revolve around the new sun. Then God – be exalted – will create, on these planets, many living creatures, and they will be some inhabited earths just like our Earth.

And so on: whenever the life of certain planets comes to an end, they will be destroyed and another group of planets will be created instead of them.

The meteorites, too, will be destroyed and become minute particles scattered in the space, and the remaining of the meteorites will be pulled to the sun by gravitation.

In this way, the universe is going on: whenever a solar system is destroyed, another solar system will issue instead of the previous one.

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 81:1 ﴿إِذَا ٱلشَّمۡسُ كُوِّرَتۡ ۝١﴾

The explanation: (When the sun shall be 'divided into many spheres'.)

The explanation: It will be cut up and converted into many globes, i.e. spherical planets. [This also is the meaning of the word in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

[**It means**: when the sun is broken up into many spheres, the Doomsday will take place.]

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 14: 48

﴿يَوۡمَ تُبَدَّلُ ٱلۡأَرۡضُ غَيۡرَ ٱلۡأَرۡضِ وَٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتُ
وَبَرَزُواْ لِلَّهِ ٱلۡوَٰحِدِ ٱلۡقَهَّارِ ۝٤٨﴾

The explanation: (On the day when the earth shall be exchanged by another earth, and the heavens too; and [all] shall

come forth unto God, the One, the Irresistible.) The 'earth', here, means all of the earths.

The interpretation: The day when the Earth, that has been destroyed and become planets, will be exchanged by another earth instead of the previous one, and this, in turn, will become planets also. That is our Sun; when its life will come to an end, it will burst and become planets.

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 74: 26-30

﴿سَأُصۡلِيهِ سَقَرَ ۝٢٦ وَمَآ أَدۡرَىٰكَ مَا سَقَرُ ۝٢٧ لَا تُبۡقِي وَلَا تَذَرُ ۝٢٨
لَوَّاحَةٞ لِّلۡبَشَرِ ۝٢٩ عَلَيۡهَا تِسۡعَةَ عَشَرَ ۝٣٠﴾

The explanation:

(26- I shall surely roast him in Saqar.

27- But can you imagine what Saqar is!?

28-It does not leave [anyone]; It does not spare [anything.]

29-It is [nowadays] looming to mankind.

30-Imposed on it [the attraction of] nineteen [planets.])

The explanation: 'Saqar' is the new sun, that appears after the explosion of our Sun, and it is Hell into which disbelievers will be punished and will suffer, that is on the Day of Judgment.

-(It is [nowadays] looming to mankind.) It means: It looms to people nowadays, from faraway; means: People, today, see it in the form of a small star because it is far from them.

-(Imposed on it [the attraction of] nineteen [planets.]) means: Upon it is the burden of the gravitation of nineteen objects, because when our Sun will burst, it will become nineteen pieces, which will be attracted by the gravitation of 'Saqar'.

God – be highly exalted – said also in the Quran, 74:35

﴿إِنَّهَا لَإِحۡدَى ٱلۡكُبَرِ ۝٣٥﴾

The explanation: ([That] surely [Saqar] is one of the greatest [suns.]) It means: Saqar is one of the large volume suns.

will be an earth, then it will burst and become nineteen pieces, which will be attracted by gravitation to the nearest sun to them. Those pieces will become new planets, after the complete cooling of their surfaces, and those new planets will revolve around the new sun. Then God – be exalted – will create, on these planets, many living creatures, and they will be some inhabited earths just like our Earth.

And so on: whenever the life of certain planets comes to an end, they will be destroyed and another group of planets will be created instead of them.

The meteorites, too, will be destroyed and become minute particles scattered in the space, and the remaining of the meteorites will be pulled to the sun by gravitation.

In this way, the universe is going on: whenever a solar system is destroyed, another solar system will issue instead of the previous one.

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 81:1 ﴿إِذَا ٱلشَّمۡسُ كُوِّرَتۡ ۝١﴾

The explanation: (When the sun shall be 'divided into many spheres'.)

The explanation: It will be cut up and converted into many globes, i.e. spherical planets. [This also is the meaning of the word in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

[**It means**: when the sun is broken up into many spheres, the Doomsday will take place.]

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 14: 48

﴿يَوۡمَ تُبَدَّلُ ٱلۡأَرۡضُ غَيۡرَ ٱلۡأَرۡضِ وَٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتُۖ
وَبَرَزُواْ لِلَّهِ ٱلۡوَٰحِدِ ٱلۡقَهَّارِ ۝٤٨﴾

The explanation: (On the day when the earth shall be exchanged by another earth, and the heavens too; and [all] shall

come forth unto God, the One, the Irresistible.) The 'earth', here, means all of the earths.

The interpretation: The day when the Earth, that has been destroyed and become planets, will be exchanged by another earth instead of the previous one, and this, in turn, will become planets also. That is our Sun; when its life will come to an end, it will burst and become planets.

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 74: 26-30

﴿سَأُصۡلِيهِ سَقَرَ ۝٢٦ وَمَآ أَدۡرَىٰكَ مَا سَقَرُ ۝٢٧ لَا تُبۡقِي وَلَا تَذَرُ ۝٢٨
لَوَّاحَةٞ لِّلۡبَشَرِ ۝٢٩ عَلَيۡهَا تِسۡعَةَ عَشَرَ ۝٣٠﴾

The explanation:

(26- I shall surely roast him in Saqar.

27- But can you imagine what Saqar is!?

28-It does not leave [anyone]; It does not spare [anything.]

29-It is [nowadays] looming to mankind.

30-Imposed on it [the attraction of] nineteen [planets.])

The explanation: 'Saqar' is the new sun, that appears after the explosion of our Sun, and it is Hell into which disbelievers will be punished and will suffer, that is on the Day of Judgment.

--(It is [nowadays] looming to mankind.) It means: It looms to people nowadays, from faraway; means: People, today, see it in the form of a small star because it is far from them.

--(Imposed on it [the attraction of] nineteen [planets.]) means: Upon it is the burden of the gravitation of nineteen objects, because when our Sun will burst, it will become nineteen pieces, which will be attracted by the gravitation of 'Saqar'.

God – be highly exalted – said also in the Quran, 74:35

﴿إِنَّهَا لَإِحۡدَى ٱلۡكُبَرِ ۝٣٥﴾

The explanation: ([That] surely [Saqar] is one of the greatest [suns.]) It means: Saqar is one of the large volume suns.

God – be highly exalted – said also in the Quran, 87: 11-12

﴿وَيَتَجَنَّبُهَا ٱلْأَشْقَى ﴿١١﴾ ٱلَّذِى يَصْلَى ٱلنَّارَ ٱلْكُبْرَىٰ ﴿١٢﴾﴾

The explanation:

(11- But the most-wretched shall flout the [admonition,]

12- He who shall roast in the great fire.)

The 'great fire', here, is Saqar; because it is bigger than our present Sun.

Question 1: If we look at the Sun disc at sunrise, we shall see it four times bigger that at noontime. The same is observed at sun-set (also it appears bigger); what is the reason for that?

Answer: When the sun rises, its rays are horizontal to start with, and for this reason we see it bigger; because its rays are directed to the sky, and as the Earth rotates more, and the day proceeds on, the direction of its rays changes and becomes vertical on the Earth; therefore, we see it small. The same will explain its big size at the time of sunset.

The following is an experiment that proves what I say: Take a glass and fill it with water, then put a coin in its bottom, then if you look at the coin from the top of the glass, you will see it as it is; but if you look at it from the side of the glass, you will see it bigger; and on the same basis, we can explain the observation of the Sun at the time of sun-rise and sun-set.

Question 2: Why do we feel the heat of the sun at the time of sunrise and sunset to be less than other day times?

Answer: The same reason, which makes the sun to appear bigger at the time of the sun-rise and sun-set, is the same reason that makes us feel its heat to be less in these two periods of the day; because the sun rays are horizontal towards the sky; therefore, a small part of its heat reaches us; but at noon-time its rays are vertical towards the ground, and so we feel it more hot.

Question 3: Why is the heat from the sun in summer more severe, while it is little in wintertime?

Answer: The reason for the first and second observations is the reason for the third one also; for the sun rays in summer are vertical towards the earth, so that the heat will be directed to the ground; but in winter they are horizontal, and the heat is directed to the sky, so that the earth will not obtain except a little amount of this heat; and for this reason the seasons are formed.

Question 4: You say that Sun is stationary, and that the Earth revolves around it, together with the rest of the planets; then what is the explanation of His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 36: 38

﴿وَٱلشَّمْسُ تَجْرِى لِمُسْتَقَرٍّ لَّهَا ۚ ذَٰلِكَ تَقْدِيرُ ٱلْعَزِيزِ ٱلْعَلِيمِ ﴿٣٨﴾﴾

The explanation: (And the sun – it runs to a fixed resting place; such [perfection] is the ordaining of the All-Mighty, the All-Knowing.)

Some of the saints (or imams) read this Quranic revelation another reading, that is:

﴿وَٱلشَّمْسُ تَجْرِى لِمُسْتَقَرٍّ لَّهَا﴾

The explanation: (And the sun [goes on] running, and has no resting place)

The interpretation: It will not stop moving even if it breaks up; because in such instance, it will become planets, which will rotate around themselves and around the new sun, and no rest from moving will be for them even if their Doomsday takes place; because if they are broken up, they will become numerous meteorites, and there will be no rest from movement for the meteorites; because they will revolve around the planets until they will be completely destroyed and become dust particles in the space.

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 25: 76; describing the dwellers of Paradise:

﴿خَٰلِدِينَ فِيهَا ۚ حَسُنَتْ مُسْتَقَرًّا وَمُقَامًا ﴿٧٦﴾﴾

God – be highly exalted – said also in the Quran, 87: 11-12

﴿وَيَتَجَنَّبُهَا ٱلْأَشْقَى ۝١١ ٱلَّذِى يَصْلَى ٱلنَّارَ ٱلْكُبْرَىٰ ۝١٢﴾

The explanation:

(11- But the most-wretched shall flout the [admonition,]

12- He who shall roast in the great fire.)

The 'great fire', here, is Saqar; because it is bigger than our present Sun.

Question 1: If we look at the Sun disc at sunrise, we shall see it four times bigger that at noontime. The same is observed at sun-set (also it appears bigger); what is the reason for that?

Answer: When the sun rises, its rays are horizontal to start with, and for this reason we see it bigger; because its rays are directed to the sky, and as the Earth rotates more, and the day proceeds on, the direction of its rays changes and becomes vertical on the Earth; therefore, we see it small. The same will explain its big size at the time of sunset.

The following is an experiment that proves what I say: Take a glass and fill it with water, then put a coin in its bottom, then if you look at the coin from the top of the glass, you will see it as it is; but if you look at it from the side of the glass, you will see it bigger; and on the same basis, we can explain the observation of the Sun at the time of sun-rise and sun-set.

Question 2: Why do we feel the heat of the sun at the time of sunrise and sunset to be less than other day times?

Answer: The same reason, which makes the sun to appear bigger at the time of the sun-rise and sun-set, is the same reason that makes us feel its heat to be less in these two periods of the day; because the sun rays are horizontal towards the sky; therefore, a small part of its heat reaches us; but at noon-time its rays are vertical towards the ground, and so we feel it more hot.

Question 3: Why is the heat from the sun in summer more severe, while it is little in wintertime?

Answer: The reason for the first and second observations is the reason for the third one also; for the sun rays in summer are vertical towards the earth, so that the heat will be directed to the ground; but in winter they are horizontal, and the heat is directed to the sky, so that the earth will not obtain except a little amount of this heat; and for this reason the seasons are formed.

Question 4: You say that Sun is stationary, and that the Earth revolves around it, together with the rest of the planets; then what is the explanation of His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 36: 38

﴿وَٱلشَّمْسُ تَجْرِى لِمُسْتَقَرٍّ لَّهَا ۚ ذَٰلِكَ تَقْدِيرُ ٱلْعَزِيزِ ٱلْعَلِيمِ ۝٣٨﴾

The explanation: (And the sun – it runs to a fixed resting place; such [perfection] is the ordaining of the All-Mighty, the All-Knowing.)

Some of the saints (or imams) read this Quranic revelation another reading, that is:

﴿وَٱلشَّمْسُ تَجْرِى لِمُسْتَقَرٍّ لَّهَا﴾

The explanation: (And the sun [goes on] running, and has no resting place)

The interpretation: It will not stop moving even if it breaks up; because in such instance, it will become planets, which will rotate around themselves and around the new sun, and no rest from moving will be for them even if their Doomsday takes place; because if they are broken up, they will become numerous meteorites, and there will be no rest from movement for the meteorites; because they will revolve around the planets until they will be completely destroyed and become dust particles in the space.

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 25: 76; describing the dwellers of Paradise:

﴿خَٰلِدِينَ فِيهَا ۚ حَسُنَتْ مُسْتَقَرًّا وَمُقَامًا ۝٧٦﴾

The explanation: (Abiding therein forever. Happy indeed will it be [as] a settlement [or resting place] and [as] an abode.)

The interpretation: The مستقر means the 'resting place', and the مُقام means the 'abode' or the place where they dwell; and The explanation: They are happy in Paradise in their rest and their dwelling. So this is the meaning of (and has no resting place)

But if we consider the external or apparent meaning of this Quranic revelation, then it means that the sun revolves around a certain star, which is stationary and bigger than it, so it attracts the sun by gravitation. This is His saying -be exalted –

﴿ وَٱلشَّمۡسُ تَجۡرِي لِمُسۡتَقَرٍّ لَّهَا ﴾

i.e. (And the sun – it runs to a fixed resting place) means: It moves and revolves around a stationary star which does not move, but it attracts the sun by gravitation.

Astronomers have discovered that the sun together with its satellites revolve around a stationary star, much bigger than it, which is situated in the 'Pleiades', around which it completes its revolution within a period of thirty years.

Question 5: What is meant by His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 18: 86

﴿ حَتَّىٰٓ إِذَا بَلَغَ مَغۡرِبَ ٱلشَّمۡسِ وَجَدَهَا تَغۡرُبُ فِي عَيۡنٍ حَمِئَةٖ وَوَجَدَ عِندَهَا قَوۡمٗا ﴾

The explanation: (Until when he reached at sun-set [time], he found it setting under the observation of a black woman, and he found with her a people.)

﴿ قُلۡنَا يَٰذَا ٱلۡقَرۡنَيۡنِ إِمَّآ أَن تُعَذِّبَ وَإِمَّآ أَن تَتَّخِذَ فِيهِمۡ حُسۡنٗا ﴿٨٦﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (We said, "O Zul-qarnain, you have either to punish or to show them kindness.)?

Answer: When Alexander of Macedon[1] reached the West, i.e. to Abyssinia, he found

the citizens of that country worshipping the sun, so that they gathered outside the city at the time of sun-set, looked to the sun and sung their religious songs, and when it was about to set down and disappear from sight behind the horizon, they would kneel down and adore the sun, all of them. They had a black queen in front of them, who led them in prayer, and they imitated her prayer to the sun.

The interpretation:

-- (Until when he) i.e. Alexander (reached)

-- (At sun-set [time]) means: He arrived, at that place, at the time of sun-set.

-- (He found it setting under the observation of a black woman) means: He found a black woman watching the sun, while it was setting. That woman was a queen; and her people were assembling with her.

(1) He is 'Alexander the Great', who is called 'Zul-qarnain'; i.e. the 'man with two horns'; died at Babylon; learned under the instructions of Aristotle. He became the king of Macedonia after Philip, his father. He determined to conquer the Persian Empire, and he overcame them in Asia Minor at Apsos at 334BC, then at the shores of Greece (after besieging it for seven months,) then at Egypt (where he founded Alexandria city.) Finally, he attacked Darius in Iraq and overcame him at Arbela, at 331BC. Then he continued his march to the boundaries of Persia, and went farther to the banks of the Indus River.

'Zul-qarnain' was one of the bravest and greatest warriors and champions. Prophet Daniel foretold or prophesied about him, before his birth; that is in the Hebrew Bible [which is included in the Old Testament], Book of Daniel, chapter 8: that he saw [in a vision] a ram with two long horns, pressing with them against the west and against the north and against the south: and no beasts could withstand him nor be delivered of his hand: and he did according to his own will and become great. And for this reason, he was called 'Zul-qarnain', i.e. the man with two horns.

The meaning: Alexander found a people worshipping the sun at its setting; they had a queen leading them in prayer to the sun; she was adoring and kneeling down to the sun; so that her people were imitating her, and doing the same as was their queen doing.

In Arabic, the word عين was misinterpreted as the 'water-spring'; while, actually, it means the 'watching and observation'; as is it mentioned in many instances in the Quran and in the Arab poetry. Examples:

(1) God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 11: 37

﴿ وَٱصۡنَعِ ٱلۡفُلۡكَ بِأَعۡيُنِنَا وَوَحۡيِنَا ﴾

The explanation: (But build the Ark under Our observation and as We instruct you by revelation.)

(2) God – be highly exalted - said in the Quran, 54:14

﴿ تَجۡرِي بِأَعۡيُنِنَا جَزَآءٗ لِّمَن كَانَ كُفِرَ ۝١٤ ﴾

The explanation: (Which ran [upon the water,] in Our sight, as a reward for him that was rejected) i.e. under our watching and observation.

(3) God - be exalted – said also in the Quran, 52: 48

﴿ وَٱصۡبِرۡ لِحُكۡمِ رَبِّكَ فَإِنَّكَ بِأَعۡيُنِنَا وَسَبِّحۡ بِحَمۡدِ رَبِّكَ حِينَ تَقُومُ ۝٤٨ ﴾

The explanation: (So forbear patiently to the commandment of your Lord: for surely you [Mohammed] are under Our observation. And celebrate the praises of your Lord, when you rise up [from sleep.])

His saying -be exalted - فَإِنَّكَ بِأَعۡيُنِنَا i.e. (for surely you [Mohammed] are under Our observation.) means: under Our observation and watching. [The actual Arabic word may lit. mean "Our eyes".]

[Now we continue the interpretation of the Quranic revelation 18: 87-88]

-- (And he found with her a people.) Means: Alexander found, with the black woman, a people doing exactly as was she doing, and imitating her in her worship.

-- (We said, "O Zul-qarnain); this is the surname or the title of Alexander.

-- (You have either to punish) these people who are worshipping the sun, if they do not believe in God and resign or submit themselves to Him.

-- (Or to show them kindness) if they believe and obey our order.

Here, the عين in Arabic means the watching, and it does not mean a water-spring. The proof of this lies in His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 18: 91

﴿ حَتَّىٰٓ إِذَا بَلَغَ مَطۡلِعَ ٱلشَّمۡسِ وَجَدَهَا تَطۡلُعُ عَلَىٰ قَوۡمٖ لَّمۡ نَجۡعَل لَّهُم مِّن دُونِهَا سِتۡرٗا ۝٩٠ ﴾

The explanation: (Until when he reached at sun-rising [time], he found it rise upon a people for whom We made no shelter therefrom.)

So, if the عين meant a water-spring, then God –be exalted – would say: 'he found it rise from a water-spring!' But the meaning is: He found it set down for a people having such a description; and rise upon a people having such a description.

Therefore, God - be exalted – meant by that to describe the people, and not to describe the sun.

[This also is the meaning of the word in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

Question 6: Are there, in the space, suns other than our sun?

Answer: There are a large number of suns, but because of their far distances from us, we can only see them as stars.

Question 7: Then there must be planets that revolve around them just as that our sun has its terrestrial planets!

Answer: They have no planets, because they are not impregnated; and in the universe, there is no solar system other than our solar system, but when it will be destroyed, another

solar system will issue instead of it, just like our sun, which appeared instead of the previous one.

Question 8: Is there any impregnation for suns?

Answer: The impregnation or pollination of the sun is by pulling to it an earthy piece, like a meteorite or some of the broken up moons and planets, then that swallowed piece will start to grow and get bigger and bigger, until that sun will become a solid object after being a gaseous one; because that piece will become as a nucleus for that sun, so that the particles of the sun substance will collect around it, until its substance will cool and it will become an earth that will burst and become planets.

Therefore, a sun which is not impregnated, will remain as a gaseous object like the rest of the stars; just like the flower which will not become a fruit unless after its impregnation or pollination.

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 51: 49

﴿وَمِن كُلِّ شَيۡءٍ خَلَقۡنَا زَوۡجَيۡنِ لَعَلَّكُمۡ تَذَكَّرُونَ ﴿٤٩﴾﴾

The explanation: (And of every thing have We created two spouses, that you may reflect.)

The first (or the oldest) earth, that God -be exalted – created, was a small one; because it was impregnated or pollinated from the particles when it was a sun; and when its life ended, it was broken up, and was attracted by the gravitation of the sun nearest to it, which, in turn, was impregnated by its rocks. The third sun drew, by its gravitation, rocks from the first and second suns. The fourth sun obtained rocks from the second and the third; and in this way our Sun is the ninth sun.

Therefore, the oldest or the first earth was a small one; the second was bigger, because it pulled more rocks, while the third was still more bigger, and in this way, the earths get more and more in growth and increment, until our earth [i.e. the previous sun] became nine planets after its Doomsday and explosion; that

is because of its big volume; because it pulled rocks and meteorites more than the previous suns. Our Sun will become nineteen planets when its life will end; and that is because of its large volume.

Then the succeeding sun will be bigger than our Sun. For this reason, God – be celebrated His praise – said in the Quran, 74: 35, describing it:

﴿إِنَّهَا لَإِحۡدَى ٱلۡكُبَرِ ﴿٣٥﴾﴾

The explanation: ([That] surely [Saqar] is one of the greatest [suns.]) It means: It is one of the greatest suns in volume [and mass.]

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 2: 24

﴿فَإِن لَّمۡ تَفۡعَلُواْ وَلَن تَفۡعَلُواْ فَٱتَّقُواْ ٱلنَّارَ ٱلَّتِي وَقُودُهَا ٱلنَّاسُ وَٱلۡحِجَارَةُۖ أُعِدَّتۡ لِلۡكَٰفِرِينَ ﴿٢٤﴾﴾

The explanation: (But if you do it not, and you shall surely do it not, then ward off the Fire, whose fuel is men and stones, prepared for disbelievers.)

The explanation:

The 'Fire' is one of the suns, which is also called 'Saqar', and it is that which will attract [the parts of] our Sun, after the explosion of the latter.

-- (whose fuel is men and stones) means: the rocks of meteorites; because the sun pulls them to it by its gravitation.

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 66: 6

﴿يَٰٓأَيُّهَا ٱلَّذِينَ ءَامَنُواْ قُوٓاْ أَنفُسَكُمۡ وَأَهۡلِيكُمۡ نَارٗا وَقُودُهَا ٱلنَّاسُ وَٱلۡحِجَارَةُ عَلَيۡهَا مَلَٰٓئِكَةٌ غِلَاظٞ شِدَادٞ لَّا يَعۡصُونَ ٱللَّهَ مَآ أَمَرَهُمۡ وَيَفۡعَلُونَ مَا يُؤۡمَرُونَ ﴿٦﴾﴾

The explanation: (O believers, protect yourselves and your families from a Fire, the fuel of which is men and stones, on which are [appointed for punishment] angels stout [-hearted:

showing no mercy to disbelievers] and stern [- in seizing and chastising disbelievers], who never disobey God in [dragging disbelievers by chains to Hell] that He commands them, but they carry out [the chastisement with] which they are commanded.)

The 'stones' means the rocks of meteorites.

Question 9: God – be highly exalted – said in the Quran, 41: 37

﴿لَا تَسْجُدُوا۟ لِلشَّمْسِ وَلَا لِلْقَمَرِ وَٱسْجُدُوا۟ لِلَّهِ ٱلَّذِى خَلَقَهُنَّ إِن كُنتُمْ إِيَّاهُ تَعْبُدُونَ ﴿٣٧﴾﴾

The explanation: (Do not prostrate yourselves [in adoration] to the sun nor the moon, but prostrate yourselves to God Who created them [all], if [truly] Him [alone] you do serve.)

Then why did He -be exalted – say خَلَقَهُنَّ i.e. (created them [all]) in plural in Arabic, while they are two ?[In Arabic there are three language forms: singular, two or twine, and plural.]

Answer:

-- (Do not prostrate yourselves [in adoration] to the sun nor the moon) means the kind of the sun, and the kind of the moon. It means: Do not prostrate yourselves in adoration to any sun, nor to any moon. In fact, God -be exalted – mentioned each of the sun and the moon in singular; because the inhabitants of the Earth have only one moon and they see one sun only. The interpretation of this Quranic revelation will be as follows:

Do not prostrate yourselves in adoration to the sun that you see, nor to the moon that you see, but adore God Who created all suns and moons, if indeed you worship and serve Him alone, and none apart from Him.

Comets

Comets are those known publicly as the 'Tailed Stars'. They are some flaming fiery objects, floating in the space. Their origin is from the sun; i.e. they are sparks fallen out of the sun, then they started roaming in the space. They do not rotate

around themselves as do hot spherical objects usually do, but they move roaming in the space; and they are oblong objects.

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 77: 32-34

﴿إِنَّهَا تَرْمِى بِشَرَرٍ كَٱلْقَصْرِ ﴿٣٢﴾ كَأَنَّهُۥ جِمَٰلَتٌ صُفْرٌ ﴿٣٣﴾ وَيْلٌ يَوْمَئِذٍ لِّلْمُكَذِّبِينَ ﴿٣٤﴾﴾

The explanation:

(32- It [: Hell] shoots sparks like the castle.
33- as it might be yellow thick ropes [of ships.]
34- Woe, on that day, to the deniers [of the Judgment Day.])

The explanation:

-- (It) means: Hell, and Hell is the sun,

-- (Shoots sparks like the castle) means: the size of each one of these sparks which Hell throws out in the space is like the size of one of some large constructed palaces; and its sparks, actually, are the comets. For this reason God -be exalted – said كَأَنَّهُۥ جِمَٰلَتٌ صُفْرٌ i.e. (As it might be yellow thick ropes [of ships.]); i.e. like the yellow stays of ships. Originally it is جِمالات in plural in Arabic; this is indicated by the form of writing it in the Quran; this may be proved by His saying -be exalted - شَرَر i.e. sparks in plural, and He did not mention it in singular; this may also be proved by His saying صُفْرٌ in plural, and He did not mention it in singular. The word جِمَٰلَتٌ means the ropes of the ship; for God -be exalted – simulated the long tails of comets to the [long thick yellow] ropes of the ship.

Comets, in the Quran, are mentioned by the Arabic word نجم i.e. 'star'; God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 86: 13

﴿وَٱلسَّمَآءِ وَٱلطَّارِقِ ﴿١﴾ وَمَآ أَدْرَىٰكَ مَا ٱلطَّارِقُ ﴿٢﴾ ٱلنَّجْمُ ٱلثَّاقِبُ ﴿٣﴾﴾

The explanation:

(1- [I swear] by the sky [of Nineveh] and [its] 'night visitant'!
2-But can you imagine what a 'night visitant' [that was!?]

3-It was the [tailed-] star with sharp brilliancy [: the flaming comet.])

It means: the flaming comet.

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 56: 75

﴿ ۞ فَلَآ أُقۡسِمُ بِمَوَٰقِعِ ٱلنُّجُومِ ﴿٧٥﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (But, no! I swear by the [multiple] fallings of the stars!)

God means by that: the falling down of comets; and this is a threatening oath.

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 53: 1-2

﴿ وَٱلنَّجۡمِ إِذَا هَوَىٰ ﴿١﴾ مَا ضَلَّ صَاحِبُكُمۡ وَمَا غَوَىٰ ﴿٢﴾ ﴾

The explanation:

(1- By the comet when it will fall down [upon the earth!]

2- Your comrade [Mohammed] has not misled, neither has he seduced [anyone away from the right way.])

The meaning: By the comet when it falls down upon the Earth! The answer of the oath is (Your comrade [Mohammed] has not misled, neither has he seduced [anyone away from the right way.])

God – celebrated be His praise - said in the Quran, 77: 8

﴿ فَإِذَا ٱلنُّجُومُ طُمِسَتۡ ﴿٨﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (So when the [tailed-] stars [: the comets] are immersed [in the earth.])

The explanation: When comets are immersed inside the earth and will disappear inside it; because they will fall upon the earth when Doomsday gets very near; because the heat of the earth will finish, so it will be exposed to the falling of comets down upon it.

God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 81: 15-16

﴿ فَلَآ أُقۡسِمُ بِٱلۡخُنَّسِ ﴿١٥﴾ ٱلۡجَوَارِ ٱلۡكُنَّسِ ﴿١٦﴾ ﴾

The explanation:

(15- But [should] I swear by [the comets] that are [now] slinking back!

16- the moving along, the swept [in the future] into their dens!)

This means the comets; because, nowadays, they are invisible to our sight, and they are going to be swept to the earth just before Doomsday; i.e. they will resort to the earth, and hide inside it; and they are 'the moving along', which are moving today, roaming in the space, without any refuge or resort.

God -be exalted – destroyed many nations, of infidels and disbelievers, by comets, and threatened Quraish, the tribe of Prophet Mohammed, by the falling of comets down upon the earth in the terminal time of the World [i.e. just before Doomsday.]

Ancient nations knew about this fact, and were afraid of its occurrence; because they saw the comets by their own eyes, and their fathers told them about it.

The following is quoted from the Arabic edition of the Reader's Digest magazine, no. 24, Aug. 1945:

" The Day when the Comet struck the Earth Surface

Herbert Rafael Mass – summarized from Sat. Evening Post magazine:

"Scientists believe that a huge fire ball struck the earth, some thousands of years ago. This, too, is possible to happen again.

Some people deny the idea of the comet completely; they try to attribute the craters, which are seen on the earth surface, in the plain of the eastern American beach, to some other possibilities. But large number of geologists, astronomers and astrogeologists think that the comet did come. It came, as they believe, from the western-north, some thousands of years ago, when a big fireball with a flaming tail appeared above the middle of Canada. When it was above the Northern Dakota and Minnesota states, it was larger than the full moon; but when

crossing the sky of Illinois, it was a flaming terror in the space, while the hot compressed air was preceding it, eating away the trees of the forests as if they were matchsticks.

The ball proceeded rapidly, burning the green plains of America, and melting away the rocks of the mountains. While it was rushing with a speed of 144 000 miles per hour, the gravitational force of the earth pulled it, so that it approached gradually to the earth surface until it struck it, between Virginia state and the middle of Georgia state, and it might have been immersed or dipped few miles inside the earth, which was quaked by its strike.

This comet was not a single hard mass of metal and rocks, but it was a group of meteorites; the volume of some of them was larger than a palace building by three or four times. The entire group was nearly of a spherical shape with an area of at least about 400 miles.

Suppose that all guns and plane-bombs that had been fired by people were collectively and simultaneously fired, then it might be equal in severity to that hell which that comet had burnt. That comet killed the living beings so that none of them remained, except few, in a large area, which – nowadays – includes South and North Carolina states, Georgia, Eastern Tennessee, Kentucky and the southern part of Virginia states.

No doubt, that the affliction with this calamity was tremendous in an area of land larger than the first mentioned area; and it extended, in the north, to Quebec district in Canada; and in the south, to Kansas state. If a man sees such a great strike, then he may imagine, while dying, that it is the Doomsday, and that the end of the world has come. We can only imagine hearing and seeing that damage which would impair the hearing and confuse the sight: successive roaring of destructive thunder; rising up flames of fire and curtains of smoke and pebbles rushing in the air. But when that strange roaring would stop and the dust clouds clear away gradually, we would find the surface of the quaking earth wounded and burnt; where nothing

remained alive and mobile on it, but only the pillars of smoke and vapors rising up from many large craters, in which the fragments of that comet settled there like fire brands; that comet whose life had ended.

If scientists are right in their hypothesis according to the available information, then surely that event was the most horrible calamity that had ever occurred, and its indicative signs are present upon the earth surface. What are these indicative marks?

They are thousands of craters, on the earth surface, which are oval-shaped pits, regularly arranged, in an area with a diameter of about eighty miles: from Virginia state to part of Georgia, and neighboring the Atlantic Ocean beach, about 20 - 40 miles away from it.

These depressed craters, called the 'gulfs', remained unknown until a day came when an officer in a team for land surveying by the airplane, displayed to two scientists a collection of photographs.

The purpose of taking these photographs was to know the site of trees for cutting, but they made it clear that these depressions, which are similar to volcano craters, have parallel long axes and that their direction is from north-west to south-east, so that the sand, which was pushed by bombardments, collected edges at the south-east borders.

This was extremely strange, and made the two scientists: Dr. F. Melton and Dr. William Shriffs to visit that area at the first opportunity, and following a detailed research, they suggested the theory of the comet at 1933. Their respectful research was published in the Geology magazine, and it was a matter of conversation and dispute among the scientists of this century.

The deniers of the comet theory said that these gulfs might be formed from the effect of winds and water, or they might be some lakes, which had dried up.

The reader may be astonished and may deny the idea of a

comet that came roaring from the space, and then it dug these craters; but consider that which happened to the farmer Seminof and the shepherd Lukhtikan:

In the morning of June 30, 1908, at 7 am, while the farmer Seminof was sitting in the balcony of his house, in the northern parts of middle Siberia; he suddenly saw in the north a flaming object with somewhat bluish coloration, larger than the sun disc, traversing the space, then it fell in the planes of Siberia, between the two rivers of Elinissy and Allina, so it ran in the space where a pillar of light fell.

In spite of that this light was about fifty miles away from his house, the heat was so extensive to let the farmer Seminof feel his clothes about to burn. After a while, he heard a violent explosion followed by a violent blast of air came that threw Seminof out of his balcony, so he fell unconscious, while his house collapsed.

On the other hand, in the site of that strange light, the shepherd Lukhtikan was driving to the pasture a herd of 1500 deer, and Lukhtikan's herd was stricken just before Seminof was stricken too by the same hot air; so that all the herd perished and nothing of it was found except few burnt bodies.

Four hundred miles away, the Siberian Railways men saw suddenly a glowing in the northern-east, then the train started to shake vigorously; therefore, they stopped it to avoid its deviation from the line.

At Arkonsik city, five hundred miles away, the barometer instrument recorded an airwave; while the sensitive barometer at Keo observatory in England, 4000 miles away, recorded waves in the air.

Years passed by, and the event was nearly forgotten; but at 1927, Professor L. Kolick, leading a team of scientists, went to that remote district where the light pillar had risen in the air, where he found a depression, not very deep, extending over an area of two miles. In that depression, there was what indicated

that something had violently pushed the sand to the edge of the depression, as if there was a big stone thrown into thick mud, and its successive rings were still visible to the eye.

Inside that depression, he found two hundred craters, the diameters of which vary from one to fifty cubits. Every tree within that depression was destroyed; and 15-20 miles around the depression, there were thousands of fallen trees, scattered from the centre in a fan-shaped pattern. Evidently, a strong object had stricken the Earth in that centre.

Kolick found also that what had stricken the earth there was a group of meteorites, preceded by a wave of hot air, as if a mighty compressor had forced it forwards, so that it had dug that depression, and turned to break the trees of the forests as if the hand of a mighty giant had stricken them, so they fell down to the ground. This is the same wave that had stricken the herd of Lukhtikan and all the alive beings in that area.

Mankind were very lucky on that day of the year 1908; for if the comet had fallen on New York or Paris instead of falling on an uninhabited area, then that could have been one of the great disasters in the history.

Undoubtedly, that event was caused by a comet; for on the 30th. of June 1908, the Earth globe was near to the orbit of the Boins-Wink comet. It seems that the big comet that had fallen on Siberia was part of it.

'Hoo Pee', a Red Indian tribe, narrate a traditional tale that the 'Great Spirit' descended, once, to the earth from his high settling-place, surrounded by fire and thunder, and it then entered the inside of the earth. Moreover, they will lead you to the pit into which that 'spirit' entered; it is a large depression in Arizona desert about one mile wide, and 1300 feet deep, while its edge is 125-660 feet higher than the level of the surrounding place. So, there it struck the earth, somewhat less than five thousand years ago that was another comet, bigger than the Siberia comet.

That comet was a mass of iron and nickel; its weight might be more than one million tons, and its speed might be 40 miles/ second, when it came down inclining over Utah and struck Arizona State. The description of its roaring and shaking might be very difficult, but that was strong enough to push it 2400 feet into the hard rock that was ground like a powder.

Some other small objects, falling upon the earth, which may be worth mentioning, are those like the Cape York comet; it weighs 36 Tons, which was brought by the Admiral Barry, the discoverer of the North Pole.

It may be easy to realize and believe about such [comets and meteorites], and that which happened at Arizona and Siberia; but it is difficult to imagine the disaster that quake America, if it is right that the gulfs of Carolina were craters dug out by the large pieces of a broken up star or comet.

The comet which struck Arizona dug out a pit of one mile width; and the group of objects which struck Siberia dug out two hundred pits, the width of some of them was fifty cubits; but some of the gulfs on the American beach have a width of two and a half miles, a length of three or four miles, and they are – not many hundreds – but many thousands in number, scattered over an area of about 40,000 square miles. Therefore, if the cause is the strike of a comet on the earth, then it will be a calamity that cannot be compared to what happened at Siberia and Arizona.

One day, I surveyed some of the gulfs in a region assigned by the Air Force as a military training center for bombardment; the bombs caused some pits, in the ground, of 40 feet width; these pits were not more than some moles over a land having many craters, the width of some of them was about 10 000 feet. In this great difference is a terrible example; for there may be, in the depth of the space beyond the stars, some mysterious powers that have become angry because of the conduct of this human being to destroy himself; and it may tell him, one day, 'O dwarf,

leave all this. Now let Us teach you how the destruction and ruining can be!'

This is what has been published in the magazine."

Question: What is meant by His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 86: 1-4

﴿ وَٱلسَّمَآءِ وَٱلطَّارِقِ ۝١ وَمَآ أَدۡرَىٰكَ مَا ٱلطَّارِقُ ۝٢
ٱلنَّجۡمُ ٱلثَّاقِبُ ۝٣ إِن كُلُّ نَفۡسٖ لَّمَّا عَلَيۡهَا حَافِظٞ ۝٤ ﴾

The explanation:

(1- [I swear] by the sky [of Nineveh] and [its] 'night visitant'!

2- But can you imagine what a 'night visitant' [that was!?]

3- It was the [tailed-] star of sharp brilliancy [: the flaming comet.]

4- There will not be [an angel] for every soul to guard it [when the punishment will come.]) ?

Answer: The interpretation:

- ([I swear] by the sky): This is an oath by the sky, and it was the sky of Nineveh [: Mosul city in Iraq,]
- (And [its] 'night visitant'!) Means that which passes in a road at night; this is an oath by the thing that passed in the sky of Nineveh at night,
- (But can you imagine what a 'night visitant' [that was!?]) This gives an idea about how dangerous was that thing.

Then, God –be celebrated His praise – explained about that thing and said: النَّجْمُ الثَّاقِبُ i.e. (It was the [tailed-]star of sharp brilliancy [: the flaming comet.])

[This also is the meaning of the words, of this Quranic revelation, in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

That comet was a mass of iron and nickel; its weight might be more than one million tons, and its speed might be 40 miles/ second, when it came down inclining over Utah and struck Arizona State. The description of its roaring and shaking might be very difficult, but that was strong enough to push it 2400 feet into the hard rock that was ground like a powder.

Some other small objects, falling upon the earth, which may be worth mentioning, are those like the Cape York comet; it weighs 36 Tons, which was brought by the Admiral Barry, the discoverer of the North Pole.

It may be easy to realize and believe about such [comets and meteorites], and that which happened at Arizona and Siberia; but it is difficult to imagine the disaster that quake America, if it is right that the gulfs of Carolina were craters dug out by the large pieces of a broken up star or comet.

The comet which struck Arizona dug out a pit of one mile width; and the group of objects which struck Siberia dug out two hundred pits, the width of some of them was fifty cubits; but some of the gulfs on the American beach have a width of two and a half miles, a length of three or four miles, and they are – not many hundreds – but many thousands in number, scattered over an area of about 40,000 square miles. Therefore, if the cause is the strike of a comet on the earth, then it will be a calamity that cannot be compared to what happened at Siberia and Arizona.

One day, I surveyed some of the gulfs in a region assigned by the Air Force as a military training center for bombardment; the bombs caused some pits, in the ground, of 40 feet width; these pits were not more than some moles over a land having many craters, the width of some of them was about 10 000 feet. In this great difference is a terrible example; for there may be, in the depth of the space beyond the stars, some mysterious powers that have become angry because of the conduct of this human being to destroy himself; and it may tell him, one day, 'O dwarf,

leave all this. Now let Us teach you how the destruction and ruining can be!'

This is what has been published in the magazine."

Question: What is meant by His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 86: 1-4

﴿ وَٱلسَّمَآءِ وَٱلطَّارِقِ ۝١ وَمَآ أَدۡرَىٰكَ مَا ٱلطَّارِقُ ۝٢
ٱلنَّجۡمُ ٱلثَّاقِبُ ۝٣ إِن كُلُّ نَفۡسٖ لَّمَّا عَلَيۡهَا حَافِظٞ ۝٤ ﴾

The explanation:

(1- [I swear] by the sky [of Nineveh] and [its] 'night visitant'!

2- But can you imagine what a 'night visitant' [that was!?]

3- It was the [tailed-] star of sharp brilliancy [: the flaming comet.]

4- There will not be [an angel] for every soul to guard it [when the punishment will come.]) ?

Answer: The interpretation:

- ([I swear] by the sky): This is an oath by the sky, and it was the sky of Nineveh [: Mosul city in Iraq,]
- (And [its] 'night visitant'!) Means that which passes in a road at night; this is an oath by the thing that passed in the sky of Nineveh at night,
- (But can you imagine what a 'night visitant' [that was!?]) This gives an idea about how dangerous was that thing.

Then, God –be celebrated His praise – explained about that thing and said: النَّجْمُ الثَّاقِبُ i.e. (It was the [tailed-]star of sharp brilliancy [: the flaming comet.])

[This also is the meaning of the words, of this Quranic revelation, in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

When the idolaters [of Mecca] heard this threatening with the torment, they said: 'The angels will protect us from the torment when it will come on us; because we like the angels and sanctify them!' Therefore, His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 86: 4 was revealed to Mohammed – peace be on him – إِن كُلُّ نَفْسٍ لَّمَّا عَلَيْهَا حَافِظٌ i.e. (There will not be [an angel] for every soul to guard it [when the punishment will come.])

The interpretation: Not every soul will have a protecting angel [: a guardian] to protect or guard him when the torment will take place, but the protecting [or guardian] angels are:

[1] special for believers; two angels for every believer after death to protect him from devils.

There are, also, protecting [angels], special [2] for prophets, apostles and righteous guides; in this World. Moreover, [3] some of the angels record the work of man during his life-time.

The story of this comet, which God -be exalted – mentioned in this soora (or chapter) is as follows:

When Prophet Jonah invited his people [: the inhabitants of Nineveh] to believe [in God alone, and to abandon the association with God and the idolatry], they denied and refused to believe him, so he invoked God'[s punishment for them], and promised them with the torment. Then God -be exalted – sent one of the comets which passed through their sky at night; but when they saw the comet, they believed in God alone, and supplicated Him; so He shifted that torment, and the comet fell down upon another district of the Earth.

So this is the meaning of His saying -be exalted - (و السّماءِ و الطّارِقِ) i.e. ([I swear] by the sky [of Nineveh] and [its] 'night visitant'!)

This is a threatening oath, and the interpretation is: If you do not believe in my apostle Mohammed, I will send on you one of the comets, just as had I sent upon the people of Nineveh before you. This is similar in meaning to His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 77: 16-18

﴿ أَلَمْ نُهْلِكِ ٱلْأَوَّلِينَ ﴿١٦﴾ ثُمَّ نُتْبِعُهُمُ ٱلْآخِرِينَ ﴿١٧﴾ كَذَٰلِكَ نَفْعَلُ بِٱلْمُجْرِمِينَ ﴿١٨﴾ ﴾

The explanation:

(16- Did We not destroys the ancients [that denied the messengers?]

17- so shall We [destroy] after them the later [generations who will deny the Mehdi, i.e. the Paraclete, and the guides.]

18- As such shall We deal [in the future] with the guilty [among your nation, O Mohammed.])

Stars

Stars are fiery and flaming objects that are stationary in their places; so they are called the 'fixed' [in comparison to the terrestrial planets.] But they rotate around themselves from right to left. The stars become suns when they obtain some meteorites and celestial rocks; because these rocks collect some of the substance of that star, so that star will start growing and increasing until it will become a sun.

Stars are very big objects; but because of their far distances from us, we see them small. They appear whitish in color while they are young, but when they become old and are converted into suns, their color becomes near to redness.

[The pairedness (or coupling) of stars :]

Stars originate from a negative and positive current, which couple with each other forming a spiral nebula that will grow and get bigger to become a star.

(1) God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 36: 36

﴿ سُبْحَٰنَ ٱلَّذِى خَلَقَ ٱلْأَزْوَٰجَ كُلَّهَا مِمَّا تُنۢبِتُ ٱلْأَرْضُ وَمِنْ أَنفُسِهِمْ وَمِمَّا لَا يَعْلَمُونَ ﴿٣٦﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (Glory be to Him Who created all the pairs; of [the plant] which the earth produces, and of themselves, and of what they know not!)

Therefore, some of that which they do not know its pairedness (or coupling) are the stars.

(2) God - be exalted – said also in the Quran, 51: 49

﴿وَمِن كُلِّ شَيْءٍ خَلَقْنَا زَوْجَيْنِ لَعَلَّكُمْ تَذَكَّرُونَ ﴿٤٩﴾﴾

The explanation: (And of everything have We created two spouses; that you may reflect.)

The Age of Stars

The age of stars is estimated from their color, so that the white and blue stars are relatively newly formed; yellow stars are in their middle age, like our Sun; while red stars are old concerning their formation, and have attained their elderly. The older the star is, the more will its density be and vice versa.

A Rule for Celestial Objects

I say that, for every moving object, there must be a rule that it follows, and it is not possible that the planets rotate around themselves without any rule or system.

The basis of their rotation around themselves is one of two possibilities:

(1) Either the object will be quicker in its rotation as much as it is bigger in size, while its movement will be slower if it is smaller in size.

(2) Or, on the contrary, the object will be slower if it is big, and quicker if it is small.

The movement of celestial objects is necessarily based on one of these two rules.

As regards the first rule; I say it does not correlate with celestial objects; because if it was right that every big object moves quickly, then we would find the sun, which is many times bigger than all the planets, we would find it complete its rotation around itself within one hour, and we would find that Mercury, which is the smallest of the terrestrial planets, we would find it complete its rotation around itself within 25 days or more.

Therefore, we must refer to the second rule, which says: The big object is slower in rotation around itself, and the small object is quicker. [He means by the 'speed of movement' the duration of the planet to complete its rotation around itself and the duration of the planet to complete its revolution around the Sun. – the translator.]

According to this rule, we find the movement of the planets, near to the Sun, logical; these are Mercury, Venus and Earth; for astronomers have precisely estimated their timing, and have known the duration of their rotation around themselves and their revolution around the Sun.

But astronomers have mistaken as regards the rotation and revolution of the other planets; because they are faraway from the Sun. Now if we observe Mercury, we find the duration of its revolution around the Sun is 88 days, and its rotation around itself is 8 hours [Comment by the translator – that must be previously, but it has now stopped its axial rotation] , and its size is one- third that of the Earth; and so it is the nearest planet to the Sun.

If we observe Venus, we shall find the duration of its revolution around the Sun is 225 days, and its rotation around itself is 16 hours [Comment by the translator – that must be previously, but it has now stopped its axial rotation], and its volume is two-thirds that of the Earth; i.e. it is two times bigger than Mercury; and so it is farther from the Sun than Mercury is.

Then if we observe the Earth, we shall find it bigger than Venus and farther from the Sun, and it completes its revolution around the Sun in 365 days, and it rotates around itself in 24 hours.

On this rule, the rest of the planets move in their rotation and revolution. If astronomers calculate contrary to this rule, we can realize that they are wrong in their calculations, and have not correctly calculated the duration of their rotation around themselves, and that they do not know precisely their volumes; because these planets are far away from us.

The proof of this lays in the fact that we see the Sun complete its rotation around itself in 25 days and 5 hours, while it is many times bigger than all the planets.

[The Wrong Calculations of Astronomers Concerning Mars]:

Now, Mars is farther from Sun, than Earth is; and for this reason it completes its revolution around the Sun in 687 days. Then how have astronomers estimated the duration of its rotation around itself in 24 hours, like that of the Earth? And how have they estimated its volume to be smaller than the Earth? And if its revolution around the Sun is truly 687 days, then its volume must be about twice that of the Earth, and it must complete its rotation around itself within 44 hours. In addition to that, if Mars were, really, a little bit smaller than the Earth, as they say, and that the duration of its rotation around itself were, really, 24 hours, then the two planets would approach each other, and they would even strike each other. If it were so, then we would see Mars just as do we see the Earth in its extent, or it would be neighboring the Earth and alongside it, so that we could easily cross to Mars from the Earth! Then how could it be like that, while we can only see it as one of the stars in the sky, due to its far distance from us?

[The Wrong Calculations of Astronomers Concerning Jupiter]:

Similarly, they have made some mistakes in their calculations about Jupiter; for they say that it completes its rotation around itself in 10 hours, and that its volume is bigger than the Earth by 1250 times. I say that if Jupiter is farther from the Sun than Mars is, and that it completes its revolution around the Sun in 4333 days, then its volume must not be more than12 times that of the Earth, and the proof of that is that its year equals twelve years of the years of the Earth, and it must complete its rotation around itself in 12 days.

On this basis, [celestial] objects have their speed of movement, and their distances away from the Sun: the big planet

will be far away from the Sun, slow in its movement around itself and around the Sun; while the small object will be nearer to the Sun and quicker in its movement.

[He means by the 'speed of movement' the duration of the planet to complete its rotation around itself and the duration of the planet to complete its revolution around the Sun. – the translator.]

The Day and the Night

We said that the Earth rotates around itself, and completes its rotation in 24 hours, and because of this rotation the day and night will result; because the side that is in front of the Sun will have day light. While the opposite side, that is not facing the Sun, will have night; because it does not obtain sunrays. And as long as the Earth will rotate, the day and night will succeed each other. This is a recognized fact to astronomers.

(1) God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 31: 29

﴿أَلَمْ تَرَ أَنَّ ٱللَّهَ يُولِجُ ٱلَّيْلَ فِى ٱلنَّهَارِ وَيُولِجُ ٱلنَّهَارَ فِى ٱلَّيْلِ وَسَخَّرَ ٱلشَّمْسَ وَٱلْقَمَرَ كُلٌّ يَجْرِىٓ إِلَىٰٓ أَجَلٍ مُّسَمًّى وَأَنَّ ٱللَّهَ بِمَا تَعْمَلُونَ خَبِيرٌ ﴿٢٩﴾﴾

The explanation: (Have you [Mohammed] not seen how God causes the night to pass into the day, and causes the day to pass into the night, and has subdued the sun and the moon [to do their function]; each running [in its orbit] to an appointed term; and that God is All-Aware of what you [Muslims] do?)

The interpretation:

-- (God causes the night to pass into the day, and causes the day to pass into the night) means: He introduces the night into the day, while the night is still in the other side; and He introduces the day into the night, while the day is still in the other side; i.e. they succeed each other, so that in one side there is day, while in the other side there is night.

[A miracle of the Quran: the authentic word of God :]

(2) God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 39: 5

﴿ خَلَقَ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلۡأَرۡضَ بِٱلۡحَقِّۖ
يُكَوِّرُ ٱلَّيۡلَ عَلَى ٱلنَّهَارِ وَيُكَوِّرُ ٱلنَّهَارَ عَلَى ٱلَّيۡلِۖ
وَسَخَّرَ ٱلشَّمۡسَ وَٱلۡقَمَرَۖ كُلٌّ يَجۡرِي لِأَجَلٖ مُّسَمًّىۗ
أَلَا هُوَ ٱلۡعَزِيزُ ٱلۡغَفَّٰرُ ۝٥﴾

The explanation: (He created the heavens and the earth with the true [promise][1]; He makes the night spherical on the day, and makes the day spherical on the night; and He subjected the sun and the moon: each running on for an appointed term; surely, He is the All-Mighty, the All-Forgiving!)

The interpretation: The word يُكَوِّرُ i.e. (makes spherical) means: to wrap; e.g. He wrapped the bandage around his wounded head. Now, dear reader, look carefully to the eloquence and clear language of the Quran. Look carefully and think how the Glorious God has declared the sphericity of the Earth, its rotation around itself, the transferring of sunrays upon it and the formation of the day and night, by His saying -be exalted - يُكَوِّرُ اللَّيْلَ عَلى النَّهارِ i.e. (He makes the night spherical on the day.)

The Glorious God said يُكَوِّرُ i.e. (makes spherical) because the earth is spherical in shape, so the sunrays will spread on half of the sphere so that the day will be on its lightened side, while the night will be in the dark side, then the sunrays will transfer to the other side because of the rotation of the Earth, so that the position of the night will become day, and the position of the day will become night. Therefore, the sunrays get a spherical shape around the Earth, and give it light and heat, and the day and night will result from that.

Then again look carefully, dear reader, to this word and think about its meaning. Can any human being be able to give a

(1) i.e. with the true promise of destruction and ruining on Doomsday.

synonym of it? Or can he express in such [few] words all this information and knowledge?

This word, alone, suffices as a proof of the truthfulness of Mohammed –peace be on him – and a proof of the existence of a Creator for the universe; **because the sphericity of the Earth was unknown to people until the present time[the Quran was revealed more than 1400 years ago]**, and this knowledge and statement have not been discovered and become a reality except in these present days.

Celebrated be His praise! That Who created it, rotated it around its axis and caused the day and night because of its rotation. Celebrated be His praise, and be highly exalted He above what the unjust says.

(3) God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 25: 45-46

﴿ أَلَمۡ تَرَ إِلَىٰ رَبِّكَ كَيۡفَ مَدَّ ٱلظِّلَّۖ وَلَوۡ شَآءَ لَجَعَلَهُۥ سَاكِنٗا ثُمَّ جَعَلۡنَا ٱلشَّمۡسَ
عَلَيۡهِ دَلِيلٗا ۝٤٥ ثُمَّ قَبَضۡنَٰهُ إِلَيۡنَا قَبۡضٗا يَسِيرٗا ۝٤٦﴾

The explanation: (45-Have you [man] not seen [the work of] your Lord: how He has kept on the shadow [of the earth: the night, on successive zones of the earth, due to its axial rotation?] But had He willed, He could have made it stationary [as when the earth will stop its axial rotation;] then We have made the sun [-setting] a sign to it[s coming.] 46- Then We have withdrawn it to Us [by the sun-rising on that zone of the earth], with an easy withdrawal.)

The interpretation:

-- (Have you [Mohammed] not seen [the work of] your Lord)

-- (How He has kept on the shadow) It means: how He has made the shadow of the earth continuous, uninterrupted. The shadow of the earth is the night; whenever a shadow goes away, another shadow will come instead of that. That is due to the rotation of the earth around itself.

-- (But had He willed, He could have made it stationary [as when the earth will stop its axial rotation;]) means: everlasting, not going away; and that will be when He will stop the earth from rotation; and in such instance, the shadow of the earth will be everlasting in one side, and the sun-light in the other side will too be everlasting. At that time, your rivers will become dry, your trees will become dry, your farms will burn, your cattle will die and you will die from heat, starvation and thirst. While in the night side, no plant or animal may survive for you, and you will have no water except the ice; because of the severe coldness. That will be the result of the everlasting sun, and this will be the result of the everlasting shadow.

-- (Then We have made the sun [-setting] a sign to it[s coming.]) Means: We have made the sunset a sign for the coming of the earth shadow, i.e. the coming of the night.

-- (Then We have withdrawn it to Us [by the sun-rising on that zone of the earth]) means: We remove the shadow by transferring the sunlight from place to place.

-- (With an easy withdrawal) means: easy without any difficulty or trouble; due to the earth rotation around itself.

(4) This Quranic revelation is similar to His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 28: 71

﴿قُلْ أَرَءَيْتُمْ إِن جَعَلَ ٱللَّهُ عَلَيْكُمُ ٱلَّيْلَ سَرْمَدًا إِلَىٰ يَوْمِ ٱلْقِيَـٰمَةِ مَنْ إِلَـٰهٌ غَيْرُ ٱللَّهِ يَأْتِيكُم بِضِيَآءٍ ۖ أَفَلَا تَسْمَعُونَ ﴿٧١﴾﴾

The explanation: (71-Say [to them, O Mohammed]: "What's your opinion: if God makes for you the night everlasting till the Doomsday, who is a god other than God who could bring you [day-] light? Will you not then hear [the wind and the falling of the snow?]")

Question: You say that the earth is spherical, as it is indicated by His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 39: 5

﴿يُكَوِّرُ ٱلَّيْلَ عَلَى ٱلنَّهَارِ وَيُكَوِّرُ ٱلنَّهَارَ عَلَى ٱلَّيْلِ﴾

The explanation: (He makes the night spherical on the day, and makes the day spherical on the night);

Then what is the meaning of His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 2: 22

﴿ٱلَّذِى جَعَلَ لَكُمُ ٱلْأَرْضَ فِرَٰشًا وَٱلسَّمَآءَ بِنَآءً﴾

The explanation: (Who made, for you, the earth covered [with an earthy layer suitable for cultivation and dwelling], and [made] the sky built [with gaseous layers packed one above another],)?

Answer: It means: He covered it by an earthy layer, in order that it would be suitable for planting and dwelling. This is similar to His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 51: 48

﴿وَٱلْأَرْضَ فَرَشْنَٰهَا فَنِعْمَ ٱلْمَـٰهِدُونَ ﴿٤٨﴾﴾

The explanation: (And the earth – We have covered [with a layer of soil]; and how well We have prepared it!) means: He covered the earth with an earthy layer, so that He prepared it for agriculture.

This Quranic revelation is confirmed by His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 20: 53

﴿ٱلَّذِى جَعَلَ لَكُمُ ٱلْأَرْضَ مَهْدًا وَسَلَكَ لَكُمْ فِيهَا سُبُلًا﴾

The explanation: (Who has made the earth prepared for you, and made for you paths therein.)

It means: He made it prepared and suitable for agriculture and dwelling; for He covered it with an earthy layer.

The Rain

["But mist came up from the earth, and watered the whole surface of the ground." - Book of Genesis, chapter 2: 6]

The origin of the rain is from seas; because sun-rays fall down on the earth, so that the water of seas and rivers evaporates by the sun heat; the vapor goes up in the sky, and the vapor particles convert into water particles because of the coldness of the atmosphere in the high altitudes, and with continuing of the influence of the coldness on these particles, they change into snow particles which remain scattered in the sky, but when some of the water vapor again goes up in the sky, and a hot wind comes to drive it under these snow particles scattered in the sky, then the heat of the wind and the vapor will melt away that snow, so it will fall down as rain.

(1) God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 55:19-20

﴿مَرَجَ ٱلۡبَحۡرَيۡنِ يَلۡتَقِيَانِ ۝١٩ بَيۡنَهُمَا بَرۡزَخٞ لَّا يَبۡغِيَانِ ۝٢٠﴾

The explanation:

(19- The 'wave' of the two [: the White and the Red] seas meet together [in the future, through the Suez Canal.][1] 20- between the two is [now] a [land] barrier they cannot transgress.)

The explanation:

المرج i.e. The stirring and roughness, means to be rough and stormy and to have waves.

[It may also be interpreted as follows:]

What emerges from the two seas will meet in the sky, and that is the water vapor, which comes out of the seas, because of the heat of the sun, and then the wind comes to drive it, and will collect in the sky and become rain, which will fall down upon

(1) This Quranic revelation was revealed to Prophet Mohammed - Peace be on him – about 1400 years before digging out the Suez Canal; this is one of the miracles of the Quran – the translator.

the earth. There is a barrier or partition, so that none of them will overcross to the other. The two seas are the sweet and salty water.

It may also be interpreted as follows:

There was a land partition or barrier between the Red Sea and the White Sea. Then they dug the Suez Canal, so the water of both seas met; this is one of the miracles of the Quran.

(2) God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 7: 57

﴿وَهُوَ ٱلَّذِي يُرۡسِلُ ٱلرِّيَٰحَ بُشۡرَۢا بَيۡنَ يَدَيۡ رَحۡمَتِهِۦ حَتَّىٰٓ إِذَآ أَقَلَّتۡ سَحَابٗا ثِقَالٗا سُقۡنَٰهُ لِبَلَدٖ مَّيِّتٖ فَأَنزَلۡنَا بِهِ ٱلۡمَآءَ فَأَخۡرَجۡنَا بِهِۦ مِن كُلِّ ٱلثَّمَرَٰتِ﴾

The explanation: (It is He Who looses the winds bearing good-tidings before [, or heralding, the rain which is] His mercy; till, when they are charged with the heavy cloud, We drive it to a dead land[1], and therewith send down [, from the sky, rain] water, and bring forth therewith all the fruits …etc.)

The interpretation:

-- (And therewith send down [, from the sky, rain] water); it means: and, by means of the wind, We make the fall down of water; i.e. because of it; for it is a hot wind which melts away some of that snow so that it falls down as rain.

(3) And God -be exalted – said in the Quran, 35: 9

﴿وَٱللَّهُ ٱلَّذِيٓ أَرۡسَلَ ٱلرِّيَٰحَ فَتُثِيرُ سَحَابٗا فَسُقۡنَٰهُ إِلَىٰ بَلَدٖ مَّيِّتٖ فَأَحۡيَيۡنَا بِهِ ٱلۡأَرۡضَ بَعۡدَ مَوۡتِهَاۚ﴾

The explanation: (God is He Who looses the winds, and they stir up [and collect] clouds, which We drive to a desolate [:dead] land, and thereby quicken the land, after it is desolate [:dead])

(4) God - be exalted – said also in the Quran, 30: 48

(1) i.e. a land having no plant.

﴿ٱللَّهُ ٱلَّذِى يُرْسِلُ ٱلرِّيَـٰحَ فَتُثِيرُ سَحَابًا فَيَبْسُطُهُۥ فِى ٱلسَّمَآءِ كَيْفَ يَشَآءُ وَيَجْعَلُهُۥ كِسَفًا فَتَرَى ٱلْوَدْقَ يَخْرُجُ مِنْ خِلَـٰلِهِۦ﴾

The explanation: (God is He Who looses the winds, and they stir up [and collect] clouds, which He spreads in the sky as He pleases, and makes them as [many] fragments, and you [man] see the [nearby and large] rain drops issue out of the midst of the [clouds] …etc.)

The الوَدْقَ is the rain, which is nearby to the ground.

So, God -be exalted – explained that the rain comes down from among the clouds; and it is not the cloud itself that comes down as rain; that is because the hot wind and the cloud will melt away some of the snow particles scattered high in the sky, so that they will fall down as rain, from among the cloud.

(5) God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 24: 43

﴿أَلَمْ تَرَ أَنَّ ٱللَّهَ يُزْجِى سَحَابًا ثُمَّ يُؤَلِّفُ بَيْنَهُۥ ثُمَّ يَجْعَلُهُۥ رُكَامًا فَتَرَى ٱلْوَدْقَ يَخْرُجُ مِنْ خِلَـٰلِهِۦ وَيُنَزِّلُ مِنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ مِن جِبَالٍ فِيهَا مِنۢ بَرَدٍ فَيُصِيبُ بِهِۦ مَن يَشَآءُ وَيَصْرِفُهُۥ عَن مَّن يَشَآءُ ۖ يَكَادُ سَنَا بَرْقِهِۦ يَذْهَبُ بِٱلْأَبْصَـٰرِ ﴿٤٣﴾﴾

The explanation: (Have you not seen how God drives the clouds, then composes them, then converts them into a heaped mass, then you see the rain issuing out of the midst of them? And He sends down – from the sky: from mountains therein - hail, so that He smites whom He will with it, and averts it from whom He will, well-nigh the flashing of its lightening snatches away the sight.)

Then look and contemplate that God - be exalted - said يَخْرُجُ مِنْ خِلَالِهِ i.e. (issuing out of the midst of them); that is because the cloud will melt away some of that snow, and this latter will fall down as rain.

It is mentioned in the Old Testament, Genesis, and chapter 2: 6

"But mist came up from the earth, and watered the whole surface of the ground."

Question: If the rain is originally from vapor, then what are these frogs and minute fishes that, sometimes, fall down together with the rain?

Answer: These animals fall down with the rain; because the wind carries these animals, and they stay hanging in the clouds, and when the rain comes down, they also come down with it.

The Snow

The vapor, rising up from seas and rivers, changes into snow particles scattered high in the sky as we mentioned, then if that region is hot like India, Hijaz (in Saudi Arabia) and other hot regions, then the wind and the cloud rising up from the earth will melt away some of that snow into rain. But if that region is cold like Iran, Russia and other cold regions, then the snow – after increasing and accumulating – will fall down upon the ground in its snow-form, and it will not become rain; because there isn't any hot wind to melt it away except occasionally when it will fall down as rain.

Sometimes the snow falls down upon the ground in some districts in profuse amounts, and it may accumulate to about one meter or more above the surface of the earth. In those icy areas, people make the carriages that glide on the ice; so that they carry their luggage upon them, and use them also for sports and playing. In some countries, they store some of that ice in the subterranean vaults and cover it with straw till summer time, when they take from it their daily need.

The Hailstone

Hailstones are formed from the snow scattered high in the sky, at winter time, and also from the snow accumulated on the high mountains in the cold countries; that is when a stormy wind passes on these mountains, it carries – by its way – some of such snow to some other places. Then, by passing in the atmosphere, these snows will be rolled down to be in the form of small white balls, that will fall down together with the rain, and destroy the plant wherever they may fall.

This is indicated by the fact that we see the falling of the hailstone is in the Spring, when the air becomes somewhat hot; because the hot wind melts out some of this snow, and lift the other non-molten snow, which - by passing again in the atmosphere – will freeze once again, and will roll down in the form of small white ice balls, which are the hailstone.

If you break one of those ice balls and examine it carefully, you will see some of its particles transparent: these are molten out of the snow on its contact with the hot wind, then they have frozen. You will see the other particles white and non-transparent, which are carried by the wind as it is and have not molten.

This is indicated by His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 24: 43

﴿وَيُنَزِّلُ مِنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ مِن جِبَالٍ فِيهَا مِنۢ بَرَدٍ فَيُصِيبُ بِهِۦ مَن يَشَآءُ وَيَصۡرِفُهُۥ عَن مَّن يَشَآءُۖ يَكَادُ سَنَا بَرۡقِهِۦ يَذۡهَبُ بِٱلۡأَبۡصَٰرِ ٤٣﴾

The explanation: (And He sends down – from the sky: from mountains therein – hail, so that He smites whom He will with it, and averts it from whom He will, well-nigh the flashing of its lightening snatches away the sight.)

The interpretation:

- (And He sends down – from the sky) i.e. And He sends down the hailstone from the air [which is the lower part of the atmosphere]
- (From mountains therein –) i.e. in the sky of the Earth; they are mountains of clouds and snow. If you travel by airplane you will see many mountains spread in the space: they are only cloud mountains,
- ([Some] hail) i.e. a little amount of hail is formed from these cloud mountains,
- (so that He smites whom He will) to destroy his plants [: crops and fruit] (with it),
- (And averts it from whom He will) to let his plants survive.

- (Well-nigh the flashing of its lightening) i.e. **the lightening of the cloud**; they are positive and negative electrical charges, from which the electrical sparks are formed which makes light at night,
- (Snatches away the sight); because of its extreme light and brightness in the darkness of night.

The hail is white solid small ball; poets liken the teeth of their beloved to the hail; [here, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible mentioned some of the Arabic poetry as examples.]

Large hailstones destroy the plants [: the crops and fruits] and kill the cattle and man, and, in fact, they harmed a large number of people.

The following incidents are some examples of that:

It is mentioned in the Horriah newspaper, no. 881 on 13/5/1953 [It was an Iraqi newspaper published at that time]:

"The hailstones fell on the Nassiriah city in the south of Iraq, at about 7.50 am of the day of the blessed Feast of Breaking the Ramadan Fast [Barum Feast.] Each piece, as large as a brick, weighed 160 g. Its falling down lasted 20 minutes. It pored and pierced the ceilings and made them like a sieve. Many were injured when these hailstones fell down upon them, for which they were admitted to hospital."

I have read once in the Egyptian magazine, about the fall down of some colored hail: 'red' in some districts and 'black' in some other regions. This indicates the mixing of the soil of the mountain with the hail that gave it such coloration.

The Tide

[The mistake of Astronomers about the tide]:

Astronomers claim that the tides result from the gravitational force of Moon, which influences the sea water, so that there will be, once, rising in the water, and another time there will be falling.

I say that this theory is wrong, and there is no influence of Moon's gravitational force on the seawater. The indications of that are:

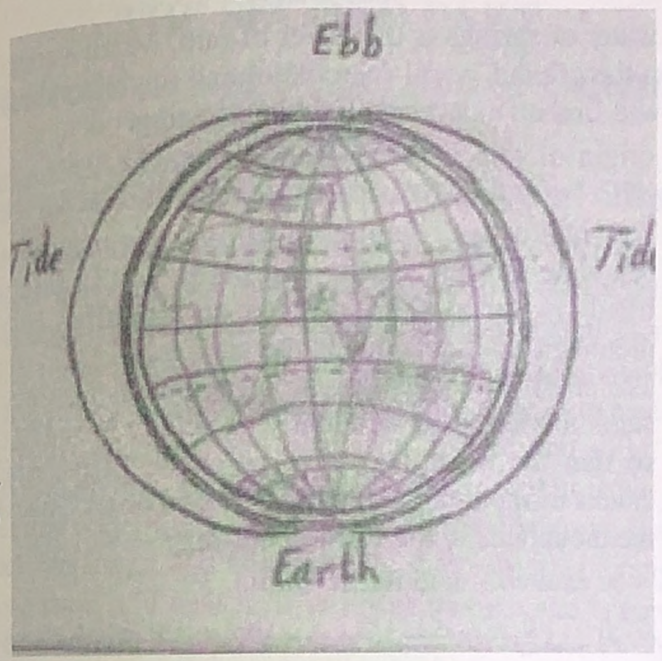
(1) The gravitational force of Earth is more than fifty times stronger than that of Moon.

(2) The core of Earth is hot and flaming; while the core of Moon is cold, and no heat inside it, and we know that the heat is the cause of the gravitation.

(3) The water is attracted to Earth because it is directly on its surface, whereas Moon is obviously far away from the water, then how could the Moon gravitation have a stronger effect on the water than the Earth gravitation; so that the first will pull the water of the seas and oceans, which actually are under the influence of the Earth gravitation?

So Moon is faraway from them, and its core is cold: with no heat inside it, which might enable it to gravitate. And if there is any effect of Moon on the seawater, then the rainwater should be more liable to be pulled by its gravitation; because the rainwater is nearer to Moon than the seawater is to Moon.

[Diagram 7]



The Tide and the Ebb

The true cause of the tide is the rotation of Earth around its inclining (oblique) axis; because the water inclines to the low place so that there will be some rising, while at the high place there will be some falling, then the water returns to its place when the Earth rotation is complete, where the low region will become high, and so the rising and falling interchange.

For this same reason, it is observed that some seas at the equator of the Earth have no tides. I can prove my opinion by the occurrence of the tide twice per day and not more; that is according to the rotation of the Earth; for it completes its rotation in 24 hours time.

[The translator: There is a difference in the diameter of Earth at the equator from the diameter between the two poles, in addition to the inclination of the axis of the Earth of 23 degrees and the rotation of the Earth as explained by the interpreter in the past lines above.]

Springs

The water of springs is the water of rain, which – after falling down on the ground – will [percolate] and run under the ground, until it will find an exit through which it will get out.

The origin of this water is from mountains. This occurs by two ways:

(1) The rain water, falling down on the mountains, will percolate through cracks and pores, so that they will be filled by water, then it finds an exit from below the mountain, so it gets out as the springs.

(2) The snow, that falls down on mountains in winter time, starts to melt away gradually, specially in summer time, so that the resulting water percolate in the pores and cracks of mountains, then it will find an exit from below the mountains in the form of springs.

God – be exalted – said in the Quran, 39: 21

﴿أَلَمْ تَرَ أَنَّ ٱللَّهَ أَنزَلَ مِنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ مَآءً فَسَلَكَهُۥ يَنَٰبِيعَ فِى ٱلْأَرْضِ ثُمَّ يُخْرِجُ بِهِۦ زَرْعًا مُّخْتَلِفًا أَلْوَٰنُهُۥ﴾

The explanation: (Have you not seen that God has sent down [rain] water from the sky, and has caused it to pass through the earth [then to come out] as water-springs, and afterwards produces thereby plant different in color, ...etc.)

It means: He caused water to percolate through the earth, and made from it the water-springs.

Hot Springs

The water is heated by the heat of the earth core, that is because of the presence of fissures and cracks in the stony land; so that fire and hot gases will leak out or penetrate through these fissures, and ascend up to the cold layer of the earth; and when the spring-water passes over it, it will become hot and spring out from that water-spring. Some of such hot springs may give forth a hot water with temperature that may reach 190 degrees Centigrade. Some hot springs are present in the north of Iraq, near Mosul; it is called the 'Hammam Al- Aliel'.

THE SECOND PART

Destruction and Dispersion of Celestial Objects

Destruction and Dispersion of Celestial Objects

Every wise man should know that material objects do not remain as they are, as time and days will pass by, i.e. any material object whether it is a stone, iron, wood or any living body like those of animals or man etc.; it will – inevitably – be destroyed and broken up; even though it is the strongest or the hardest body; e.g. we know that iron is hard and solid, but in spite of its hardness, it is quickly oxidized, so that if we bury a piece of iron under the ground, then after one year we shall find it eroded and rotten and become like dust. Another example: If we take a stone and heat it, it will disintegrate and become like dust whatever hard it is.

As such is the human body; for it is going to become old, then it will be destroyed whatever his life is long. Therefore, material bodies at last will be destroyed and will disappear.

(1) God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 55: 26-27

﴿كُلُّ مَنْ عَلَيْهَا فَانٍ ﴿٢٦﴾ وَيَبْقَىٰ وَجْهُ رَبِّكَ ذُو ٱلْجَلَٰلِ وَٱلْإِكْرَامِ ﴿٢٧﴾﴾

The explanation:

(26- Whosoever upon the [earth] shall perish.

27- But the 'neighborhood' of your Lord, endowed with majesty and honor, shall endure.)

The interpretation: The material (or mortal) life has an end, and every material (or mortal) object or body upon earth will disintegrate and vanish. So the word فان i.e. (shall perish), in Arabic indicates the finishing.

-- (But the 'neighborhood' of your Lord, endowed with majesty and honor, shall endure.) The وَجْه in Arabic means the

Springs

The water of springs is the water of rain, which – after falling down on the ground – will [percolate] and run under the ground, until it will find an exit through which it will get out.

The origin of this water is from mountains. This occurs by two ways:

(1) The rain water, falling down on the mountains, will percolate through cracks and pores, so that they will be filled by water, then it finds an exit from below the mountain, so it gets out as the springs.

(2) The snow, that falls down on mountains in winter time, starts to melt away gradually, specially in summer time, so that the resulting water percolate in the pores and cracks of mountains, then it will find an exit from below the mountains in the form of springs.

God – be exalted – said in the Quran, 39: 21

﴿أَلَمْ تَرَ أَنَّ ٱللَّهَ أَنزَلَ مِنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ مَآءً فَسَلَكَهُۥ يَنَٰبِيعَ فِى ٱلْأَرْضِ ثُمَّ يُخْرِجُ بِهِۦ زَرْعًا مُّخْتَلِفًا أَلْوَٰنُهُۥ﴾

The explanation: (Have you not seen that God has sent down [rain] water from the sky, and has caused it to pass through the earth [then to come out] as water-springs, and afterwards produces thereby plant different in color, …etc.)

It means: He caused water to percolate through the earth, and made from it the water-springs.

Hot Springs

The water is heated by the heat of the earth core, that is because of the presence of fissures and cracks in the stony land; so that fire and hot gases will leak out or penetrate through these fissures, and ascend up to the cold layer of the earth; and when the spring-water passes over it, it will become hot and spring out from that water-spring. Some of such hot springs may give forth a hot water with temperature that may reach 190 degrees Centigrade. Some hot springs are present in the north of Iraq, near Mosul; it is called the 'Hammam Al- Aliel'.

THE SECOND PART

Destruction and Dispersion of Celestial Objects

Destruction and Dispersion of Celestial Objects

Every wise man should know that material objects do not remain as they are, as time and days will pass by, i.e. any material object whether it is a stone, iron, wood or any living body like those of animals or man etc.; it will – inevitably – be destroyed and broken up; even though it is the strongest or the hardest body; e.g. we know that iron is hard and solid, but in spite of its hardness, it is quickly oxidized, so that if we bury a piece of iron under the ground, then after one year we shall find it eroded and rotten and become like dust. Another example: If we take a stone and heat it, it will disintegrate and become like dust whatever hard it is.

As such is the human body; for it is going to become old, then it will be destroyed whatever his life is long. Therefore, material bodies at last will be destroyed and will disappear.

(1) God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 55: 26-27

﴿كُلُّ مَنْ عَلَيْهَا فَانٍ ﴿٢٦﴾ وَيَبْقَىٰ وَجْهُ رَبِّكَ ذُو ٱلْجَلَٰلِ وَٱلْإِكْرَامِ ﴿٢٧﴾﴾

The explanation:

(26- Whosoever upon the [earth] shall perish.

27- But the 'neighborhood' of your Lord, endowed with majesty and honor, shall endure.)

The interpretation: The material (or mortal) life has an end, and every material (or mortal) object or body upon earth will disintegrate and vanish. So the word فان i.e. (shall perish), in Arabic indicates the finishing.

-- (But the 'neighborhood' of your Lord, endowed with majesty and honor, shall endure.) The وجه in Arabic means the

direction or the side in the origin of the word, like His saying - be exalted - in the Quran, 2: 148

﴿ وَلِكُلٍّ وِجْهَةٌ هُوَ مُوَلِّيهَا ﴾

The explanation: (Each [sect: Jews, Christians and Muslims] have their own [direction of prayer, or "qibla"], to which [God] turn them.)

Also His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 2: 115

﴿ فَأَيْنَمَا تُوَلُّوا فَثَمَّ وَجْهُ ٱللَّهِ ﴾

The explanation: (Withersoever you turn, there [you will find] God in front [of you.])

Therefore, the interpretation of this Quranic revelation (55: 27): Every material object will vanish, while every ethereal alive body will survive after its transfer to the neighborhood of its Lord.

(2) God -be exalted – said also in the Quran, 28: 88

﴿ كُلُّ شَيْءٍ هَالِكٌ إِلَّا وَجْهَهُۥ ۚ لَهُ ٱلْحُكْمُ وَإِلَيْهِ تُرْجَعُونَ ﴿٨٨﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (Every [material] thing will perish saving His aspect; the judgment will be [according to] His [will]; and you [all] will be brought back to Him [after your death.])

The interpretation: Its parts will disintegrate and vanish away, while every ethereal one will survive; i.e. every thing at your side and [neighborhood] is a mortal and dying, but that which is at His side [or neighborhood] does not die.

Now after becoming clear to you that mortals are going to be destroyed and ruined, then you should know that celestial objects also are going to be destroyed and will vanish away; because they are material objects. Therefore, the sun and moons will break up, the earth will break up, the mountains will scatter, and the gaseous heavens will crack and disappear; in other words: the solar system, as a whole, is going to be destroyed, and another solar system will issue instead of the present one; for the sun will crack and will become many planets, and the

planets will break up into meteorites, and so on the solar system will break up and a new sun will appear which will attract those broken up pieces around it, and a new solar system will thus be formed. Then when the life of that new sun will come to an end, it will also crack, and its solar system will break up, and another system will issue instead of it and so on.

In the following pages, we shall mention the destruction of each of the celestial objects of our solar system, in details, with quotation of the Quranic revelations and logical proofs; and God, Most Gracious, grants the success.

The Standstill of the Earth

We have said that the Earth rotates around itself so that the day and night issue, and the cause of its rotation is the heat present in its core. Obviously, this heat will not last for ever, but will finish and the Earth will gradually cool little by little in the course of time, just as had the Moon cooled and stopped its rotation around itself. Therefore, when the Earth central heat will finish, it will come to a standstill; i.e. it will not rotate around itself; and that will take place for two reasons:

The first is the depletion of its central heat,

And the second is the large amount of particles and meteorites that fall on it from the space; so that its cold crust will increase, and it will stop its axial rotation.

Then there will be no interchange between the day and night, but the night will be everlasting till Doomsday; because the side facing the sun will have an everlasting day, that no night will succeed, while the side -that is not facing the sun- will have an everlasting night that no day will succeed.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 28: 71-72

﴿ قُلْ أَرَءَيْتُمْ إِن جَعَلَ ٱللَّهُ عَلَيْكُمُ ٱلَّيْلَ سَرْمَدًا إِلَىٰ يَوْمِ ٱلْقِيَٰمَةِ مَنْ إِلَٰهٌ غَيْرُ ٱللَّهِ يَأْتِيكُم بِلَيْلٍ تَسْكُنُونَ فِيهِ ۖ أَفَلَا تُبْصِرُونَ ﴾

The explanation:(71-Say [to them, O Mohammed]: "What's your opinion: if God makes for you the night everlasting till the

Doomsday, who is a god other than God who could bring you [day-] light? Will you not then hear [the wind and the falling of the snow?]"?

72- Say: "What's your opinion: if God makes for you the day everlasting till the Doomsday, who is a god other than God who could bring you night wherein you may rest? Will you not then see [the severe heat of the sun?])?

The interpretation:

- (If God makes for you the night everlasting) indicates the side, which will have an everlasting night.
- (If God makes for you the day everlasting) indicates the side, which is facing the sun.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 74: 32-34

﴿كَلَّا وَٱلْقَمَرِ ﴿٣٢﴾ وَٱلَّيْلِ إِذْ أَدْبَرَ ﴿٣٣﴾ وَٱلصُّبْحِ إِذَآ أَسْفَرَ ﴿٣٤﴾﴾

The explanation:

(32- No, [they cannot get rid of the torment; I swear] by the moon [when it divides into two halves!]

33- And the night when it retires [from you, and will never return to you!]

34- And the morning when it shines forth [and you will never have night again.]

The 'night' means that long night; and (when it retires) means: when it will withdraw from you, so that it will never return to you again, but instead the day will be everlasting for you, so that you will die from its heat, and the 'morning' means that long day.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 81: 17-19

﴿وَٱلَّيْلِ إِذَا عَسْعَسَ ﴿١٧﴾ وَٱلصُّبْحِ إِذَا تَنَفَّسَ ﴿١٨﴾

إِنَّهُۥ لَقَوْلُ رَسُولٍ كَرِيمٍ ﴿١٩﴾﴾

The explanation:

(17- And [should I swear] by the night when it shall come to a standstill!

18- And by the morning when it shall breathe away [the night.]

19- That the [Quran] is the saying of an honorable messenger [: Gabriel.])

The interpretation:

-- (When it shall come to a standstill) means: when it shall be fixed in place and its duration shall be prolonged, i.e. it shall be everlasting till Doomsday.

[This is an oath]: By that long night when it will remain as it is, and by that long day when its morning shall appear and be clear of its night. This, actually, is a threatening oath by the torment of that day and that night.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 84: 16-17

﴿فَلَآ أُقْسِمُ بِٱلشَّفَقِ ﴿١٦﴾ وَٱلَّيْلِ وَمَا وَسَقَ ﴿١٧﴾﴾

The explanation:

(16- But no, I swear by the twilight [zone: the zone intermediate between the day zone and the night zone!]

17- And by the night and [by] all [the beasts] that it will round up!)

So, the 'twilight' is the zone intermediate between the day and the night.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 92: 1-2

﴿وَٱلَّيْلِ إِذَا يَغْشَىٰ ﴿١﴾ وَٱلنَّهَارِ إِذَا تَجَلَّىٰ ﴿٢﴾﴾

The explanation:

(1- [I swear] by the night, when it shall enshroud [that region of the earth!]

2- And [by] the day, when it shall clear away [the darkness from another region of the earth!])

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 93: 1-3

﴿وَٱلضُّحَىٰ ﴿١﴾ وَٱلَّيْلِ إِذَا سَجَىٰ ﴿٢﴾ مَا وَدَّعَكَ رَبُّكَ وَمَا قَلَىٰ ﴿٣﴾﴾

The explanation:

(1- [I swear] by the severe heat of [the region of] the noon-time!

2-And [by] the night when it shall be quiet and everlasting!
3- Your Lord has not forsaken you [, Mohammed,] nor has He hated you.)

[The interpreter mentioned, in his Arabic book, some of the Arab poetry to explain the meaning of the word سَجَى i.e. be quiet and everlasting.]

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 113: 1-3

﴿قُلْ أَعُوذُ بِرَبِّ ٱلْفَلَقِ ۝١ مِن شَرِّ مَا خَلَقَ ۝٢ وَمِن شَرِّ غَاسِقٍ إِذَا وَقَبَ ۝٣﴾

The explanation:

(1- Say [O Mohammed,] "I seek refuge [with God,] the Lord of the [nuclear] fission [in the sun][1],
2- from the evil of that He has created,
3- and from the evil of that [long] dark night when it shall come in."

The interpretation: The word غسق in Arabic means the dark night in which no moon is shining.

--(and from the evil of that [long] dark night when it shall come in) It means: that long night which will be in the last period of the World; for God – be exalted – commanded His prophet to ask protection of God from its evil. In that last day, the angels, the pious and the righteous will ascend up through the sky to the heavens, and none shall remain upon the earth except infidels (or disbelievers), wrong-doers and criminals.

The Earth will cease to rotate around itself, and that will last one thousand years [of our years], then Doomsday will take place. God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 32: 5

﴿يُدَبِّرُ ٱلْأَمْرَ مِنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ إِلَى ٱلْأَرْضِ
ثُمَّ يَعْرُجُ إِلَيْهِ فِى يَوْمٍ كَانَ مِقْدَارُهُۥٓ أَلْفَ سَنَةٍ مِّمَّا تَعُدُّونَ ۝٥﴾

The explanation: (He directs the "am'r" [: the angels] from the heaven to the earth; then it will ascend to Him [in heaven] in

(1) and from it, the day light will result.

a day, the measure of which is a thousand years of that you [people] count.)

The interpretation: The "am'r" is an indication of the spiritual creatures. It means: The angels are ordered to descend from heaven to the earth, then shall ascend to Him in a day, the duration of which is one thousand years. Their ascension will be to the ethereal heavens.

Ethereal creatures will leave the earth; because the torment and punishment will afflict the earth dwellers on that day.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 22: 47

﴿وَيَسْتَعْجِلُونَكَ بِٱلْعَذَابِ وَلَن يُخْلِفَ ٱللَّهُ وَعْدَهُۥ
وَإِنَّ يَوْمًا عِندَ رَبِّكَ كَأَلْفِ سَنَةٍ مِّمَّا تَعُدُّونَ ۝٤٧﴾

The explanation: (And they bid you [Mohammed] hasten on the torment, but God will never fail in His promise; for a day with your Lord is as a thousand years of what you [people] count.)

It means: a day lasting one thousand years, prepared for their punishment.

How the Terrestrial Planets Will Standstill

The planets will not come to a standstill, altogether and simultaneously, from rotation around themselves. But this will gradually take place; so that the smallest one among them will be the first to come to a standstill; then the planet bigger than the first one; then the bigger and so on till the last of them. For example, Mercury is the smallest of the planets in volume; therefore, it should stop before the rest; because the heat of the small object will finish before the big one.

After that, Venus will stop because it is bigger than Mercury. Then Earth, because it is bigger than Venus; and so on the last of them to stop will be the biggest of them in volume.

Hence, we can realize the future standstill of Earth, from the standstill of Mercury and Venus; if we find that Venus does not

2-And [by] the night when it shall be quiet and everlasting!
3- Your Lord has not forsaken you [, Mohammed,] nor has He hated you.)

[The interpreter mentioned, in his Arabic book, some of the Arab poetry to explain the meaning of the word سَجَى i.e. be quiet and everlasting.]

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 113: 1-3

﴿قُلْ أَعُوذُ بِرَبِّ ٱلْفَلَقِ ۝١ مِن شَرِّ مَا خَلَقَ ۝٢ وَمِن شَرِّ غَاسِقٍ إِذَا وَقَبَ ۝٣﴾

The explanation:

(1- Say [O Mohammed,] "I seek refuge [with God,] the Lord of the [nuclear] fission [in the sun][1],
2- from the evil of that He has created,
3- and from the evil of that [long] dark night when it shall come in."

The interpretation: The word غسق in Arabic means the dark night in which no moon is shining.

--(and from the evil of that [long] dark night when it shall come in) It means: that long night which will be in the last period of the World; for God – be exalted – commanded His prophet to ask protection of God from its evil. In that last day, the angels, the pious and the righteous will ascend up through the sky to the heavens, and none shall remain upon the earth except infidels (or disbelievers), wrong-doers and criminals.

The Earth will cease to rotate around itself, and that will last one thousand years [of our years], then Doomsday will take place. God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 32: 5

﴿يُدَبِّرُ ٱلْأَمْرَ مِنَ ٱلسَّمَآءِ إِلَى ٱلْأَرْضِ
ثُمَّ يَعْرُجُ إِلَيْهِ فِى يَوْمٍ كَانَ مِقْدَارُهُۥٓ أَلْفَ سَنَةٍ مِّمَّا تَعُدُّونَ ۝٥﴾

The explanation: (He directs the "am'r" [: the angels] from the heaven to the earth; then it will ascend to Him [in heaven] in

(1) and from it, the day light will result.

a day, the measure of which is a thousand years of that you [people] count.)

The interpretation: The "am'r" is an indication of the spiritual creatures. It means: The angels are ordered to descend from heaven to the earth, then shall ascend to Him in a day, the duration of which is one thousand years. Their ascension will be to the ethereal heavens.

Ethereal creatures will leave the earth; because the torment and punishment will afflict the earth dwellers on that day.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 22: 47

﴿وَيَسْتَعْجِلُونَكَ بِٱلْعَذَابِ وَلَن يُخْلِفَ ٱللَّهُ وَعْدَهُۥ ۚ
وَإِنَّ يَوْمًا عِندَ رَبِّكَ كَأَلْفِ سَنَةٍ مِّمَّا تَعُدُّونَ ۝٤٧﴾

The explanation: (And they bid you [Mohammed] hasten on the torment, but God will never fail in His promise; for a day with your Lord is as a thousand years of what you [people] count.)

It means: a day lasting one thousand years, prepared for their punishment.

How the Terrestrial Planets Will Standstill

The planets will not come to a standstill, altogether and simultaneously, from rotation around themselves. But this will gradually take place; so that the smallest one among them will be the first to come to a standstill; then the planet bigger than the first one; then the bigger and so on till the last of them. For example, Mercury is the smallest of the planets in volume; therefore, it should stop before the rest; because the heat of the small object will finish before the big one.

After that, Venus will stop because it is bigger than Mercury. Then Earth, because it is bigger than Venus; and so on the last of them to stop will be the biggest of them in volume.

Hence, we can realize the future standstill of Earth, from the standstill of Mercury and Venus; if we find that Venus does not

rotate around itself, then we must know that the turn of the Earth is coming on, and the torment will afflict its inhabitants.

[**An explanation by the translator:**

At first – **Mercury** stopped its axial rotation;

Then --**Venus** stopped its axial rotation; might be at 1956 after which the spots appeared on the sun surface and remained visible from Jan.28th. To Feb.10th; and will stop its rotation for 2000 of our years; then Doomsday will take place;

Earth will stop its axial rotation, 1000 years after Venus; and will stop its rotation for 1000 years; then Doomsday will take place;

Mars will stop its axial rotation, 500 years after Earth; and will stop its axial rotation for 500 years; then Doomsday will take place. – See the diagram 8 below:

[Diagram 8]

The Standstill of **Mercury**		The Standstill of **Venus**		The Standstill of **Earth**		The Standstill of **Mars**		**Doomsday**
.....	+	.....	+	.....	+	.....	+	.....
				.....		.....		.....
		? 1956 AD		100 years		500 years		500 years
						.....		
						100 years		
				.....				
				200 years				

[The standstill of Earth and some of the planets, from axial rotation, and its relation to Doomsday]

-the translator.]

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 89: 1-5

﴿وَٱلۡفَجۡرِ ۝١ وَلَيَالٍ عَشۡرٍ ۝٢ وَٱلشَّفۡعِ وَٱلۡوَتۡرِ ۝٣ وَٱلَّيۡلِ إِذَا يَسۡرِ ۝٤
هَلۡ فِي ذَٰلِكَ قَسَمٞ لِّذِي حِجۡرٍ ۝٥﴾

The explanation: (1- [I swear] by [the region of] the dawn!

2-And by the ten nights [preceding the standstill of the earth!

3-And by the even [: the two planets: Mercury and Venus] and the odd [: the planet Mars!]

4- and by the night when it will spread [, like an infection, from one planet to another: from Mercury to Venus to Earth to Mars!]

5-Will these are enough as an oath for an intelligent man?)

The interpretation:

This is an oath; the 'dawn' is the position intermediate between the night [zone] and the day [zone], that is when the Earth will come to a standstill from its rotation; because the oath is in the present tense in Arabic, as does the word 'when' indicate, and as it is observed in His saying -be exalted - وَٱلَّيۡلِ إِذَا يَسۡرِ i.e.(And by the night when it will spread [, like an infection, from one planet to another: from Mercury to Venus to Earth to Mars!])

And as such are the 'ten nights'; for they will take place when the central heat of the earth will decrease, so that, at that time, its rotation will be very slow; so that the duration of the day will be three months, and the night – too – will last three months. Therefore, when ten of such long nights will pass, the earth will stop from its rotation because its central heat will finish. At that time, the duration of the day will be one thousand years; and similarly the night [in the other side] will be. After that, Doomsday will take place.

-- (And by the even [: the two planets: Mercury and Venus] and the odd [: the planet Mars!]): the 'even' is an indication of both Mercury and Venus; because they will stop before the Earth; because their heat will finish before the finishing of that of the Earth. For this reason, God mentioned the 'even' before the 'odd', while it is expected that the odd is to be mentioned before the even. The 'odd' is an indication of Mars; because it will stop after the Earth.

-- (And by the night when it will spread [, like an infection, from one planet to another: from Mercury to Venus to Earth to Mars!])

The 'night' is that long night which will last one thousand years, and (when it will spread) means: when it will be transmitted to Mars, or when it will spread to Mars; like their saying: The disease is spreading among people, means the infection is transmitted among them from one person to another; this infection comes from Mercury to Venus, then to Earth then to Mars.

As there will be a long night in the Earth, likewise – in Mars – there will be a long night. So when the night in the Earth will have lasted one thousand of our present years, the Sun – at that time – will break up, and Doomsday will take place. This is a threatening oath.

The interpretation of these Quranic revelations:

You will see, O inhabitants of the Earth, what punishment and torment will afflict you, when it will stop its rotation, and the position of the dawn will be intermediate between the night [zone] and the day [zone], and ten long nights will cover you, that will awaken you from sleep, due to the torment and punishment that will afflict you during them.

And just as how Mercury and Venus had stopped their rotation, and their inhabitants had been afflicted by torment, the same will also afflict the Earth inhabitants. Then this disease will spread to Mars, so that it will stop its rotation and its inhabitants will be afflicted with the same torment afflicting the Earth inhabitants.

Then what are you going to do on that day? Who will save you from God's torment when it will take place?

--(Will these be enough as an oath for an intelligent man?) i.e. is there, in the oath that have just been mentioned, a conviction for any wise man, so that he will believe firmly in the oneness of God [: that He is One, according to the First Commandment], and the truthfulness and honesty of Mohammed [and that he did not lie]? And will this warning be enough as an advice to any one who may accept the advice, and a sufficient bidding for a mindful man?

Sunspots

In frequent occasions, some spots appear [every now and then] on the surface of the Sun, which remain visible for few days then disappear. Astronomers have seen these spots, as had some of the people seen them in the ancient times and started to give different explanations. One of such explanations is that Sun has become old, and these spots are part of the solar body that fire did not find fuel to consume.

In what follows, I shall copy what have been mentioned in some Egyptian newspapers about sunspots [in the Arabic edition of these newspapers.]

"The earliest time the sunspots had been seen was at 321AD, and were mentioned in the Chinese history. The Arabs, too, were aware about the spots in the ninth century, and that was at 807AD; they were very big and were visible for more than one week. But none of astronomers was interested in studying them until 1610AD, when the telescope was invented; the scientist Galileo was the first one to observe them with the aid of the telescope.

Few years ago, a spot appeared and was visible for two weeks: from 28 Jan. to 10 Feb. Evidently, from its observation, its length was 112,000 miles: a distance that equaled 14 times the radius of the Earth; its width was 63,000 miles, and its area was 3,500 million square miles, i.e. 108 times bigger than the area of the Earth, and 1445 times that of the Moon.

Appearance of the spots is usually accompanied by a magnetic field disturbance that can be detected by the astronomical observatories.

[The mistake of Astronomers concerning sunspots:]

Scientists consider these spots as a sign of the ageing of the sun [: that the sun has become old]; for they are due to the putting out of a part of the solar body, in which there is no fuel for the fire to consume."

I say that these spots are not the result of the putting out of the sun or its ageing, even though the sun, indeed, has become old, but these spots are, actually, some meteorites and celestial rocks pulled – by gravitation of the sun – from the space. The indication of that lies in:

(1) They disappear after few days when they will not be seen [afterwards], because the sun has swallowed them. If, really, these spots were due to the putting out of the sun, then they must increase a day after another until all the surface of the sun will be put out, when its Doomsday will take place.

(2) These spots are not seen by people at the present time only, but people saw them in the ancient times, when the astronomers observed them, as it is mentioned in books and history.

[**A Comment by the Translator:** This statement - said by the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan - is confirmed by the following observations:

-- The sunspot is less in temperature than the rest of the sun surface.
-- These spots are darker than the rest of the sun surface.
-- They are saucer-shaped.
-- They may be likened to a stone thrown in a pool of mud or thick liquid; in this case the affected area will be larger than the thrown stone; some of the spots appeared larger than the Moon!]

The genuine reason for the future putting out of the sun is the large number of the meteorites and celestial rocks which have been swallowed by the sun, so that its density will increase and its surface will cool leading to the formation of an earthy crust.

Most of the meteorites and celestial rocks are obtained when one of the terrestrial planets of this sun will come to a standstill; that is because meteorites, celestial rocks and moons are attracted to planets, and when the planet will be depleted of its central heat, it will stop its rotation; for the same reason, its

gravitation will be lost; because the gravitation is the result of the central heat of the planet.

At that time meteorites, celestial rocks and moons attracted by that planet will move towards the sun by its gravitational force, and the sun will swallow them.

(3) The time required for putting out of the sun is not more than two thousand years (of our present years calculations), after which the sun will become an earth with a cold crust. The indication of that is what has been mentioned, in the past pages, about the formation of our Earth; for it also was a sun which became an earth after its life had finished, and its surface had become cold, and that had lasted two thousands of our years, then it burst and became nine planets.

The same will be the fate of our sun, which will be put out, and its surface will become cold in two thousand years time, after which it will burst and break up into nineteen pieces. God - be exalted - said in the Quran, 41: 9

﴿ قُلْ أَئِنَّكُمْ لَتَكْفُرُونَ بِٱلَّذِى خَلَقَ ٱلْأَرْضَ فِى يَوْمَيْنِ وَتَجْعَلُونَ لَهُۥٓ أَندَادًا ۚ ذَٰلِكَ رَبُّ ٱلْعَٰلَمِينَ ﴾

The explanation: ([O Mohammed] say [to the idolaters]: "Do you, then, disbelieve in [God] Who created the earth in two days, and do you ascribe to Him opponents? –That is the Lord of [all] the worlds!")

The 'two days', mentioned here, means two thousands of our present years; and the 'creation' means the transformation; i.e. He transformed it into an earth after being a sun. This Quranic revelation has been interpreted when we spoke about the formation of the Earth.

As regards what was mentioned in the newspapers about the large sunspot observed few years ago, and remained visible from Jan.28th. To Feb.10th. It must, undoubtedly, be a group of meteorites, which were revolving around Venus. This Venus

had its central heat finished, and it had lost its gravitation, so that these meteorites escaped the gravitation of Venus and were pulled by the gravitational force of the sun, which swallowed them in 2 weeks time.

Some newspapers mentioned that **both Mercury and Venus had stopped their axial rotation**, so that their day and night became everlasting. About the standstill of Mercury, some of newspapers mentioned the following:

"The Burnt World"

" We mean, by "the Burnt World", the planet Mercury; for it is the nearest planet to the sun; it is only 50 million Km. from the sun.

It completes its revolution around the sun in 88 days, which is the length of its year. It faces the sun by one side only, so that it keeps the same face towards the sun, like our Moon in relation to the Earth, therefore its temperature reaches to about 400 degrees C.; i.e. four times the boiling degree of water, which is more than the melting degree of lead and bismuth.

From this, it can be realized that alive beings cannot survive on it; because they will be burnt if they are present in the Mercurial hemisphere facing the Sun, while they cannot survive in the opposite hemisphere because of the severe coldness there, which may reach (-265 degrees C.)"

Later it was mentioned in an Arabic book entitled 'Geographical Contemplations' by Reshied Rushdi, that both Mercury and Venus had stopped their axial rotation, so that both their day and night had become everlasting; that was under the title of 'An Everlasting Day and Night', page 160.

I say: the standstill of Venus from its axial rotation is a clear indication of the approach of the Doomsday; because the putting out of the Sun will start out at the time of the standstill of Venus from its axial rotation; that is because of what it obtains of the meteorites and celestial rocks belonging to Venus.

Following Venus, the turn will be for Earth to stop its axial rotation; due to the coldness of its core, then the meteorites and Moon will escape the gravitation of Earth, so that Sun will pull them by its gravitational force and swallow them.

After [Earth,] the turn will be for Mars to stop its axial rotation, so the Sun will pull its meteorites and moons, by its gravitational force, and swallow them.

The meteorites and celestial rocks belonging to these, just mentioned, three planets will be sufficient for putting out of the Sun and cooling of its surface, so that the Sun will become an earth with a cold crust. This process will be accomplished after elapsing of two thousand years, as we have explained; i.e. the Sun will burst after elapsing of two thousand years, and its Doomsday will take place; this can be calculated from *the time of the standstill of Venus from its axial rotation* ... to *the day of the break up and disruption of the solar system*.

The period between the standstill of Venus and the standstill of Earth is one thousand years. The standstill of Earth from its axial rotation will, also, last one thousand years, so the sum will be two thousand years; as God -be exalted – told about that in the Quran, 22: 47

﴿ وَإِنَّ يَوْمًا عِندَ رَبِّكَ كَأَلْفِ سَنَةٍ مِّمَّا تَعُدُّونَ ﴿٤٧﴾ ﴾

The explanation: (... for a day with your Lord is as a thousand years of what you [people] count.)

As regards Mars, its standstill lasts five hundred years; that is because Mars will come to a standstill after the standstill of Earth by five hundred years; therefore, its standstill will last five hundred years. Earth will stop rotation for one thousand years, while Mercury will last more than that.

[Diagram 8]

The Standstill of **Mercury**	The Standstill of **Venus**	The Standstill of **Earth**	The Standstill of **Mars**	**Doomsday**
..... +	..... +	..... +	..... +	.....
		.....	.....	.....
	? 1956 AD	100 years	500 years	500 years
			.....	
			100 years	
		.....		
			200 years	

[The standstill of Earth and some of the planets, from axial rotation, and its relation to Doomsday]

The Earth Approaches the Sun

The approach of Earth to Sun takes place for two reasons:

The First: cooling of its core; that is by the emergence of fire and gases from the core of the Earth because of volcanoes and the extraction of Petroleum for the advantage of people; so the cold crust of the Earth will increase in thickness while the central heat of the Earth will diminish. And as we said that the gravitation influences the cold object more than the hot one; i.e. the more cold is the object, the more will it be attracted towards the Sun by its gravitation and vice versa.

The Second: As much as the Earth central heat will diminish and its crust will increase in thickness, it will contract and get smaller and its cold crust will crack and contract; so that the longitudinal mountain ranges will form; and as we said that the smaller the object is, the more will it be attracted towards the Sun.

Therefore, the Earth central heat has diminished, due to the large number of volcanoes and the emergence from -its core- of fire and gases, and its surface has contracted, so its volume has

become smaller; and because of all that it has become nearer to the Sun.

This may be the reason for the rising of the temperature in 1978 summer in Iraq; similarly the winter, here in Iraq, also was not very cold. These two points indicate the approach of the Earth towards the Sun. [refer to the last subject in this book about the recent heat wave.] Likewise will the rest of the terrestrial planets be: each planet among them, when becoming cold, will become nearer to the Sun.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 84: 16-19

﴿فَلَآ أُقۡسِمُ بِٱلشَّفَقِ ۝١٦ وَٱلَّيۡلِ وَمَا وَسَقَ ۝١٧
وَٱلۡقَمَرِ إِذَا ٱتَّسَقَ ۝١٨ لَتَرۡكَبُنَّ طَبَقًا عَن طَبَقٖ ۝١٩﴾

The explanation:

(16- But no, I swear by the twilight [zone: the zone intermediate between the day zone and the night zone!]
17- And by the night and [by] all [the beasts] that it will round up! (1)
18- and the moon, when it will be at the full!
19- [That] you [people] shall traverse a plane after another.)

The interpretation: When these signs will take place, like the occurrence of the evening-glow and the everlasting night and what beasts it will round up; at that time you will ride up the planes or layers of the atmosphere: a layer after another, so that you will rise up and get nearer to the sun; i.e. Earth will take you: mounting the layers of the sky: one layer after another.

A scientific miracle of the Quran:

This Quranic revelation indicates also and points out to inventing the airplanes, which man uses, and which will raise him up to the layers of the sky: a layer after another; and that this will take place in the nineteenth century; [its number in the Quran, in this soora is 19.]

---

(1) It means: That everlasting night will round up or collect the living creatures; because they will run away from the heat of the dayside.

[Diagram 8]

The Standstill of **Mercury**	The Standstill of **Venus**	The Standstill of **Earth**	The Standstill of **Mars**	**Doomsday**
..... +	..... +	..... +	..... +	.....
		.....	.....	.....
	? 1956 AD	100 years	500 years	500 years
			.....	
			100 years	
		.....		
			200 years	

[The standstill of Earth and some of the planets, from axial rotation, and its relation to Doomsday]

The Earth Approaches the Sun

The approach of Earth to Sun takes place for two reasons:

The First: cooling of its core; that is by the emergence of fire and gases from the core of the Earth because of volcanoes and the extraction of Petroleum for the advantage of people; so the cold crust of the Earth will increase in thickness while the central heat of the Earth will diminish. And as we said that the gravitation influences the cold object more than the hot one; i.e. the more cold is the object, the more will it be attracted towards the Sun by its gravitation and vice versa.

The Second: As much as the Earth central heat will diminish and its crust will increase in thickness, it will contract and get smaller and its cold crust will crack and contract; so that the longitudinal mountain ranges will form; and as we said that the smaller the object is, the more will it be attracted towards the Sun.

Therefore, the Earth central heat has diminished, due to the large number of volcanoes and the emergence from -its core- of fire and gases, and its surface has contracted, so its volume has

become smaller; and because of all that it has become nearer to the Sun.

This may be the reason for the rising of the temperature in 1978 summer in Iraq; similarly the winter, here in Iraq, also was not very cold. These two points indicate the approach of the Earth towards the Sun. [refer to the last subject in this book about the recent heat wave.] Likewise will the rest of the terrestrial planets be: each planet among them, when becoming cold, will become nearer to the Sun.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 84: 16-19

﴿فَلَآ أُقۡسِمُ بِٱلشَّفَقِ ۝١٦ وَٱلَّيۡلِ وَمَا وَسَقَ ۝١٧
وَٱلۡقَمَرِ إِذَا ٱتَّسَقَ ۝١٨ لَتَرۡكَبُنَّ طَبَقًا عَن طَبَقٖ ۝١٩﴾

The explanation:

(16- But no, I swear by the twilight [zone: the zone intermediate between the day zone and the night zone!]
17- And by the night and [by] all [the beasts] that it will round up! (1)
18- and the moon, when it will be at the full!
19- [That] you [people] shall traverse a plane after another.)

The interpretation: When these signs will take place, like the occurrence of the evening-glow and the everlasting night and what beasts it will round up; at that time you will ride up the planes or layers of the atmosphere: a layer after another, so that you will rise up and get nearer to the sun; i.e. Earth will take you: mounting the layers of the sky: one layer after another.

A scientific miracle of the Quran:

This Quranic revelation indicates also and points out to inventing the airplanes, which man uses, and which will raise him up to the layers of the sky: a layer after another; and that this will take place in the nineteenth century; [its number in the Quran, in this soora is 19.]

(1) It means: That everlasting night will round up or collect the living creatures; because they will run away from the heat of the dayside.

[Diagram 8]

The Standstill of **Mercury**		The Standstill of **Venus**		The Standstill of **Earth**		The Standstill of **Mars**		**Doomsday**
.....	+	.....	+	.....	+	.....	+	.....
				.....		.....		.....
		? 1956 AD		100 years		500 years		500 years
						.....		
						100 years		
				.....				
						200 years		

[The standstill of Earth and some of the planets, from axial rotation, and its relation to Doomsday]

The Earth Approaches the Sun

The approach of Earth to Sun takes place for two reasons:

The First: cooling of its core; that is by the emergence of fire and gases from the core of the Earth because of volcanoes and the extraction of Petroleum for the advantage of people; so the cold crust of the Earth will increase in thickness while the central heat of the Earth will diminish. And as we said that the gravitation influences the cold object more than the hot one; i.e. the more cold is the object, the more will it be attracted towards the Sun by its gravitation and vice versa.

The Second: As much as the Earth central heat will diminish and its crust will increase in thickness, it will contract and get smaller and its cold crust will crack and contract; so that the longitudinal mountain ranges will form; and as we said that the smaller the object is, the more will it be attracted towards the Sun.

Therefore, the Earth central heat has diminished, due to the large number of volcanoes and the emergence from -its core- of fire and gases, and its surface has contracted, so its volume has

become smaller; and because of all that it has become nearer to the Sun.

This may be the reason for the rising of the temperature in 1978 summer in Iraq; similarly the winter, here in Iraq, also was not very cold. These two points indicate the approach of the Earth towards the Sun. [refer to the last subject in this book about the recent heat wave.] Likewise will the rest of the terrestrial planets be: each planet among them, when becoming cold, will become nearer to the Sun.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 84: 16-19

﴿فَلَآ أُقۡسِمُ بِٱلشَّفَقِ ۝١٦ وَٱلَّيۡلِ وَمَا وَسَقَ ۝١٧
وَٱلۡقَمَرِ إِذَا ٱتَّسَقَ ۝١٨ لَتَرۡكَبُنَّ طَبَقًا عَن طَبَقٖ ۝١٩﴾

The explanation:

(16- But no, I swear by the twilight [zone: the zone intermediate between the day zone and the night zone!]

17- And by the night and [by] all [the beasts] that it will round up! (1)

18- and the moon, when it will be at the full!

19- [That] you [people] shall traverse a plane after another.)

The interpretation: When these signs will take place, like the occurrence of the evening-glow and the everlasting night and what beasts it will round up; at that time you will ride up the planes or layers of the atmosphere: a layer after another, so that you will rise up and get nearer to the sun; i.e. Earth will take you: mounting the layers of the sky: one layer after another.

A scientific miracle of the Quran:

This Quranic revelation indicates also and points out to inventing the airplanes, which man uses, and which will raise him up to the layers of the sky: a layer after another; and that this will take place in the nineteenth century; [its number in the Quran, in this soora is 19.]

(1) It means: That everlasting night will round up or collect the living creatures; because they will run away from the heat of the dayside.

Logically, when the Earth will approach the Sun, then the Sun heat will influence it more, so that it will get much greater solar heat than that it was getting before.

Moreover, its standstill from rotation will lead to the heating of its surface; because the solar heat will be uninterrupted, that is in the hemisphere facing the Sun, while the opposite hemisphere will be bitterly cold; because it will get nothing of the Sun rays, and they will not have any day till the Day of Doom. Then, obviously, the inhabitants of that side will have a hard life, will suffer and have pain and torment; because the life of man and animal is dependent on sun rays without which there will be no plant or animal.

As regards the dayside inhabitants; they will die from the severe heat.

But [the inhabitants of] the zone intermediate between the night and the day, i.e. the zone of the evening glow; they will be in a better condition than the rest.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 17: 58

﴿وَإِن مِّن قَرْيَةٍ إِلَّا نَحْنُ مُهْلِكُوهَا قَبْلَ يَوْمِ ٱلْقِيَـٰمَةِ أَوْ مُعَذِّبُوهَا عَذَابًا شَدِيدًا ۚ كَانَ ذَٰلِكَ فِى ٱلْكِتَـٰبِ مَسْطُورًا ﴿٥٨﴾﴾

The explanation: (There isn't any city but we are going to destroy it before Doomsday, or chastise it with dire chastisement. That, indeed, is written in the Scripture.)

The interpretation:

- (There isn't any city) means: There isn't any city or town that will escape the destruction or the torment.
- (But We are going to destroy it); He means by that: those in the dayside; because they will die from the severe heat.
- (Or chastise it); He means by that: those in the night-side; because they will suffer from the coldness, starvation and disease. The torment and punishment will afflict them, because of being disbelievers, infidels and sinners; while

the faithful will ascend up to the heavens on that day, together with the angels, and no faithful man nor any believer will stay on the earth surface.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 22: 55

﴿وَلَا يَزَالُ ٱلَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا۟ فِى مِرْيَةٍ مِّنْهُ حَتَّىٰ تَأْتِيَهُمُ ٱلسَّاعَةُ بَغْتَةً أَوْ يَأْتِيَهُمْ عَذَابُ يَوْمٍ عَقِيمٍ ﴿٥٥﴾﴾

The explanation: (And those who disbelieve will not cease to dispute about the [Quran] until the Hour [of death] will suddenly come on them, or come on them the torment of a terminating day. (1))

God -be exalted – said also in the Quran, 30: 43

﴿فَأَقِمْ وَجْهَكَ لِلدِّينِ ٱلْقَيِّمِ مِن قَبْلِ أَن يَأْتِىَ يَوْمٌ لَّا مَرَدَّ لَهُۥ مِنَ ٱللَّهِ ۖ يَوْمَئِذٍ يَصَّدَّعُونَ ﴿٤٣﴾﴾

The explanation: (So [rise, O Mohammed,] and aim at [your people and preach to them] the religion [of Abraham], the guardian [on his sons and followers], before there comes a day which God will not let return; on that day shall they be sundered [into two bands.])

And God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 39: 39-40

﴿قُلْ يَـٰقَوْمِ ٱعْمَلُوا۟ عَلَىٰ مَكَانَتِكُمْ إِنِّى عَـٰمِلٌ ۖ فَسَوْفَ تَعْلَمُونَ ﴿٣٩﴾ مَن يَأْتِيهِ عَذَابٌ يُخْزِيهِ وَيَحِلُّ عَلَيْهِ عَذَابٌ مُّقِيمٌ ﴿٤٠﴾﴾

The explanation: (39- Say: "My people, work according to your power [against us], for I [too] am working [according to the commandment of my Lord, to preach His worship and servitude alone;] thus you will come to know."40- "To whom [: me or you] will come a degrading chastisement, and upon whom there shall fall a lasting chastisement [in the Hereafter.])

In addition, God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 52: 7-10

---

(1) i.e. the Last Day which no day will follow.

﴿قُلْ يَٰقَوْمِ ٱعْمَلُوا۟ عَلَىٰ مَكَانَتِكُمْ إِنِّى عَٰمِلٌ ۖ فَسَوْفَ تَعْلَمُونَ ﴿٣٩﴾ مَن يَأْتِيهِ عَذَابٌ يُخْزِيهِ وَيَحِلُّ عَلَيْهِ عَذَابٌ مُّقِيمٌ ﴿٤٠﴾﴾

The explanation:

(7- Surely, your Lord's punishment [for associaters] will inevitably occur.

8- There is none that can avert it.

9- Upon the day when the sky will violently heave.

10-And the mountains will move along [towards the sun.])

Moreover, God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 10: 50

﴿قُلْ أَرَءَيْتُمْ إِنْ أَتَىٰكُمْ عَذَابُهُۥ بَيَٰتًا أَوْ نَهَارًا مَّاذَا يَسْتَعْجِلُ مِنْهُ ٱلْمُجْرِمُونَ ﴿٥٠﴾﴾

The explanation: (Say: "Tell me your opinion [concerning your fate]: If His chastisement comes upon you by night or day, what for will the sinners seek to hasten?")

The Plant Will Burn and Rivers Will Dry up

When that heat will result after the standstill of the Earth from its rotation, at that time the plant will burn, trees will dry, rivers will dry up and seas will evaporate, so that there will not remain any water, seed, fruit or animal; that is on the day-side; because the Sun will not let anything available for them afterwards; so that they will die from heat and starvation.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 67: 30

﴿قُلْ أَرَءَيْتُمْ إِنْ أَصْبَحَ مَآؤُكُمْ غَوْرًا فَمَن يَأْتِيكُم بِمَآءٍ مَّعِينٍ ﴿٣٠﴾﴾

The explanation: (Say: "Have you considered: if your water should have sunk, who is then to bring you flowing water?")

The interpretation:

-- (If your water should have sunk) means: sunk and disappeared into the earth; He means by that the wells; because there will only remain for them the underground unwholesome water; i.e. they will have only the salt and bitter deep wells.

-- (Who is then to bring you flowing water?"); i.e. sweet and wholesome water for drinking, and that will be when your [surface] water will evaporate and vanish into the space.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 81: 6

﴿وَإِذَا ٱلْبِحَارُ سُجِّرَتْ ﴿٦﴾﴾

The explanation: (And when seas shall be 'seared and baked' [by the sun heat.])

[This is the meaning of the word سُجِّرَتْ i.e. dried and polished by the sun heat, in the Arab language and in the Quran, like His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 40: 70-72

﴿ٱلَّذِينَ كَذَّبُوا۟ بِٱلْكِتَٰبِ وَبِمَآ أَرْسَلْنَا بِهِۦ رُسُلَنَا ۖ فَسَوْفَ يَعْلَمُونَ ﴿٧٠﴾
إِذِ ٱلْأَغْلَٰلُ فِىٓ أَعْنَاقِهِمْ وَٱلسَّلَٰسِلُ يُسْحَبُونَ ﴿٧١﴾
فِى ٱلْحَمِيمِ ثُمَّ فِى ٱلنَّارِ يُسْجَرُونَ ﴿٧٢﴾﴾

The explanation:

(70- Those who deny the [heavenly] scripture and that [monotheism] with which We sent Our messengers [: apostles], but they certainly will come to know [the final consequences of their denial.]

71- when fetters be [or were] on their necks, as also chains, as they be [or were] dragged

72- into the boiling water, then in the fire [of volcanoes] shall they be tormented.)

[This also is the meaning of the word in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 18: 7-8

﴿إِنَّا جَعَلْنَا مَا عَلَى ٱلْأَرْضِ زِينَةً لَّهَا لِنَبْلُوَهُمْ أَيُّهُمْ أَحْسَنُ عَمَلًا ﴿٧﴾
وَإِنَّا لَجَٰعِلُونَ مَا عَلَيْهَا صَعِيدًا جُرُزًا ﴿٨﴾﴾

The explanation: (We have made what is on the earth an ornament thereof, to try them, which of them is acting best. And We shall surely make all that is on it barren dust.)

The interpretation:

- (And We shall surely make all that is on it), means: all the plant and trees that are on the earth
- (barren dust.) The word صَعِيد is the land on which there is soil and stones, but having no plant or trees. The word جُرُز is the land to which water does not reach, and is devoid of plants. This is like His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 32: 27

﴿أَوَلَمْ يَرَوْا أَنَّا نَسُوقُ ٱلْمَآءَ إِلَى ٱلْأَرْضِ ٱلْجُرُزِ فَنُخْرِجُ بِهِۦ زَرْعًا تَأْكُلُ مِنْهُ أَنْعَٰمُهُمْ وَأَنفُسُهُمْ ۖ أَفَلَا يُبْصِرُونَ ﴿٢٧﴾﴾

The explanation: (Have they not seen how We drive the [cloud bearing the rain] water to the dry land, and therewith produce crops whereof their [cattle] and [they] themselves do eat? Will they not then see?)

So the interpretation of the preceding Quranic revelation, 18: 8: We shall make it a dry land without plant or trees; because they will burn by the sun heat.

[This also is the meaning of the word in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 88: 1-7

﴿هَلْ أَتَىٰكَ حَدِيثُ ٱلْغَٰشِيَةِ ﴿١﴾ وُجُوهٌ يَوْمَئِذٍ خَٰشِعَةٌ ﴿٢﴾ عَامِلَةٌ نَّاصِبَةٌ ﴿٣﴾ تَصْلَىٰ نَارًا حَامِيَةً ﴿٤﴾ تُسْقَىٰ مِنْ عَيْنٍ ءَانِيَةٍ ﴿٥﴾ لَّيْسَ لَهُمْ طَعَامٌ إِلَّا مِن ضَرِيعٍ ﴿٦﴾ لَّا يُسْمِنُ وَلَا يُغْنِى مِن جُوعٍ ﴿٧﴾﴾

The explanation:

(1- Have [you, Mohammed, understood] the tidings of the overwhelming [sky, when it had been] conveyed to you [in a previous revelation, 44: 10-11]?

2- On that day, [many] faces will be humble.
3- Toiling and laboring hard [in the life of the World: not for God, but for those other than Him.]
4- Scorched by a very hot fire [in the Hereafter.]
5- Shall be given to drink from a very hot [and temporary water-] fountain.
6- They will have [in the world of souls, after their death] no food save from [some kind of] thorn.
7- That will not satiate nor release from hunger.)

The interpretation:

-- (Have [you, Mohammed, understood] the tidings of the overwhelming [sky]?) This is related to His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 44: 10-11

﴿فَٱرْتَقِبْ يَوْمَ تَأْتِى ٱلسَّمَآءُ بِدُخَانٍ مُّبِينٍ ﴿١٠﴾ يَغْشَى ٱلنَّاسَ ۖ هَٰذَا عَذَابٌ أَلِيمٌ ﴿١١﴾﴾

The explanation:

(10- But watch [O Mohammed] for the day when the sky will bring obvious smoke.
11- That will overwhelm people, this will be a painful torment.)

The meaning of the 'overwhelming' is that which will overwhelm, envelope or cover people by its evil; and it is the gaseous layers that will mix with each other to become a thick smoke: consisting of seven gases and causing suffocation.

- (On that day, [many] faces will be humble.) They are the associaters [i.e. those who ascribe other gods or rivals with God], and the criminals or sinners who will stay on the earth after it will stop its axial rotation.
- (Toiling and laboring hard [in the life of the World: not for God, but for those other than Him.]) They will toil with digging the underground tunnels to protect them from the burning heat of the sun, and with digging the wells to drink from their water.

-- (Scorched [in the Hereafter] by a very hot fire), which is the heat of the sun that will increase on the dayside.

-- (Shall be given to drink from a very hot [and temporary water-] fountain.) It means: They will drink water from a very hot spring for a period of time, then its water will finish, so that they will turn to the wells for drinking water, because the water of rivers and seas will evaporate by the sun heat, until no water will remain for them to drink, even the bitter and salt water of wells. [This is the meaning of the word in Arabic. It means: a very hot and temporary water spring.]

-- (That [: that kind of thorn] will not satiate nor release from hunger.)

This is also confirmed by His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 67: 30

﴿قُلْ أَرَءَيْتُمْ إِنْ أَصْبَحَ مَآؤُكُمْ غَوْرًا فَمَن يَأْتِيكُم بِمَآءٍ مَّعِينٍ ﴿٣٠﴾﴾

The explanation: (Say: "Have you considered: if your water should have sunk, who is then to bring you flowing water?"), means: If your water sinks into the earth, and you drink from the wells.

The Fixation of Moon

We said that Moon revolves around the Earth, and because of that it becomes a crescent, then a full moon, and then it returns to be a crescent. We said also that its revolution is because of the rotation of the Earth around itself. Then, logically, if the Earth stops its rotation after the deprivation of its central heat, then the Moon, too, will come to a standstill [from revolving around the Earth], so that it will remain as a full moon always, and it will not return again as a crescent; because its lightened face will be towards the Earth, and will remain as such for a limited time after which it will be pulled to the Sun by its gravitational force; because the heat of the Earth will not finish suddenly, but gradually; and it will come to a standstill before will its central heat finish completely; and the little amount of

heat remaining in the core of the Earth will be enough to hold the Moon fixed in its place.

Therefore, the standstill of both Earth and Moon will be at the same time, and when the Earth heat will completely finish, then the Moon will be cleft apart into two halves; because the compaction of any object is by the gravitation.

The Sun will still be present after the cleavage-apart of the Moon; and because it is an attracting object, it will start to pull the Moon towards itself by its gravitation.

So the Moon will stop its revolution at first, then it will cleave apart, then it will be pulled towards the Sun.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 84: 18-19

﴿وَٱلْقَمَرِ إِذَا ٱتَّسَقَ ﴿١٨﴾ لَتَرْكَبُنَّ طَبَقًا عَن طَبَقٍ ﴿١٩﴾﴾

The explanation:

(18- and the moon, when it will be at the full!

19- [That] you [people] shall traverse a plane after another.)

The word ٱتَّسَقَ in Arabic means: the Moon completes its phases until it becomes a full moon. [This also is the meaning of the word in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

The Fission of Moon into Two Halves

We said that if any attracted object escapes the gravitation, it will be destroyed if it is a big one, i.e. it will be broken up into pieces. But if it is a small one, it will be halved by fission.

Now, the Moon is attracted to the Earth, so if it escapes the gravitation – after the deprivation of the Earth heat- it will be cleft apart and become two halves, and will remain as such for a limited time, then will be pulled towards the Sun by the gravitation of the latter.

The moons of the rest of the planets will have the same fate.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 54: 1-2

﴿ٱقۡتَرَبَتِ ٱلسَّاعَةُ وَٱنشَقَّ ٱلۡقَمَرُ ۝١

وَإِن يَرَوۡاْ ءَايَةٗ يُعۡرِضُواْ وَيَقُولُواْ سِحۡرٞ مُّسۡتَمِرّٞ ۝٢﴾

The explanation:

(1- The hour [of their death] has become imminent, and the moon split [and detached from the earth in the past, and will split into two halves in the future, just before Doomsday.]

2- Yet if they see a sign, they will turn away, and keep up saying, ' [the Quran is] a magic!')

The reason for revealing this aya of the Quran, was that Quraish, the tribe of Prophet Mohammed - Peace be on him - laughed and mocked at Mohammed and said to him: "If, really, you are a prophet, then cleave the moon apart into two halves. Only in case you do that we shall believe you!" Therefore, this aya of the Quran was revealed; its interpretation is:

-- (The hour [of their death] has become imminent) means: the hour of their death has approached and become very near; and we shall punish them for their stubbornness and mocking.

-- (And the moon split [and detached from the earth in the past, and will split into two halves in the future, just before Doomsday.]) means: the moon had cleft and parted from the Earth in the past, i.e. detached from it, and it will also cleave when Doomsday is nearby.

-- (Yet if they see a sign, they will turn away, and keep up saying, ' [the Quran is] a magic!') means: If We show them, nowadays, one of Our manifest signs [or miracles] like the cleavage of the moon, or the other signs which they have demanded, and they see it with their own eyes, then after all, they will not believe in you, Mohammed, because of their stubbornness, but on the contrary, they will go astray of you, and will say: it [: the Quran] is merely a magic, and will go on saying that the Quran is a magic.

This is similar in meaning to His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 6: 111

﴿وَلَوۡ أَنَّنَا نَزَّلۡنَآ إِلَيۡهِمُ ٱلۡمَلَٰٓئِكَةَ وَكَلَّمَهُمُ ٱلۡمَوۡتَىٰ

وَحَشَرۡنَا عَلَيۡهِمۡ كُلَّ شَيۡءٖ قُبُلٗا مَّا كَانُواْ لِيُؤۡمِنُوٓاْ﴾

The explanation: (But even though We should send down the angels to them [to tell them that you, Mohammed, are God's messenger], and the dead should speak to them [that Mohammed is God's messenger], and We should gather together all [beasts] coming forth to them [and speak to them that you, Mohammed, are God's apostle], they would not believe [in you, Mohammed, but they would have said that they have been bewitched])

And God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 75: 7-10

﴿فَإِذَا بَرِقَ ٱلۡبَصَرُ ۝٧ وَخَسَفَ ٱلۡقَمَرُ ۝٨

وَجُمِعَ ٱلشَّمۡسُ وَٱلۡقَمَرُ ۝٩ يَقُولُ ٱلۡإِنسَٰنُ يَوۡمَئِذٍ أَيۡنَ ٱلۡمَفَرُّ ۝١٠﴾

The explanation: (But when the sight is dazed. And moon is cleft. And sun and moon are joined together. On that day [the disbelieving] man shall say: 'Wither to flee?')

The interpretation:

- (But when the sight is dazed) means: when the sight is in horror and perplexity for what it sees of the portents of Doomsday; that which he denied before. [This also is the meaning of the word in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

- (And moon is cleft.) The Arabic word خسف means the calamity, which afflicts a man and destroys or hurts him very much, or afflicts a house and crushes it. [This also is the meaning of the word in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

- (And sun and moon are joined together.) That is because when the moon will escape the earth gravitational force, then

the sun will draw it towards itself, and it will unite with the sun.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 91: 1-2

﴿وَٱلشَّمۡسِ وَضُحَىٰهَا ۝١ وَٱلۡقَمَرِ إِذَا تَلَىٰهَا ۝٢﴾

The explanation:

(1- [I swear] by the sun and the severe heat of its noon-time!

2- And by the moon when she [: the moon] follows him [:the sun.])

It means: when the moon follows the sun, and be attracted to it. [This also is the meaning of the word تلى in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

The Meteorites Will Move Towards the Sun

We said that the earth gravitational force is the result of its central heat. This heat will finish; then, at that time, the meteorites and meteors will escape its gravitation; likewise, will the moon do. As a result of this, the sun will pull the moon and the meteorites by its gravitational force.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 18: 47

﴿وَيَوۡمَ نُسَيِّرُ ٱلۡجِبَالَ وَتَرَى ٱلۡأَرۡضَ بَارِزَةٗ وَحَشَرۡنَٰهُمۡ فَلَمۡ نُغَادِرۡ مِنۡهُمۡ أَحَدٗا ۝٤٧﴾

The explanation: (The day when We shall move the mountains, and you [Mohammed] will see the earth conspicuous(1), and We shall gather them together, and shall not leave anyone of them behind.)

The interpretation: We said, in the past pages, that the word 'mountains' indicates the 'meteorites'; therefore:

-- (The day when We shall move the mountains) means: We shall move the meteorites towards the Sun.

(1) The soul of Prophet Mohammed - peace be on him – will be in the outer space, in the heavens; he will look to the Earth, and see it conspicuous, as a whole, circulating in the space around the Sun.

And God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 78: 20

﴿وَسُيِّرَتِ ٱلۡجِبَالُ فَكَانَتۡ سَرَابًا ۝٢٠﴾

The explanation: (And [when] mountains shall be moved and be in swarms.)

The interpretation: On that day the meteorites will move towards the Sun, in swarms like the sand grouse swarms.

And God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 81: 3

﴿وَإِذَا ٱلۡجِبَالُ سُيِّرَتۡ ۝٣﴾

The explanation: (And when the mountains shall be moved.) It means: the meteorites will be moved towards the Sun.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 52: 9-10

﴿يَوۡمَ تَمُورُ ٱلسَّمَآءُ مَوۡرٗا ۝٩ وَتَسِيرُ ٱلۡجِبَالُ سَيۡرٗا ۝١٠﴾

The explanation:

(9- Upon the day when the sky will violently heave.

10- And the mountains will move along [towards the sun.])

The interpretation: The meteorites shall move towards the Sun.

The Sky Will Be Disturbed

We said that seven gaseous layers are above the Earth, and that the Earth will stop from rotation, when its central heat will finish. When all this will take place, then the order and harmony will be disturbed; so that every moving object, attracted to the Earth, will stop its movement; and every stationary thing, belonging to the Earth, will move.

Therefore, while –nowadays – the gaseous layers are calm, stationary and not reeling, then they must be disturbed on that day, and they will reel about and heave; because the Earth is approaching the Sun, so that the standstill of the Earth and the Sun heat will reverse the arrangement of those gaseous layers; so that they will be disturbed and reel about, until they will mix with the air; so people will be diseased – because of these gases

– and they will be suffocated, which will lead to the death of large number of people.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 52: 9-10

﴿يَوْمَ تَمُورُ ٱلسَّمَآءُ مَوْرًا ۝ وَتَسِيرُ ٱلْجِبَالُ سَيْرًا ۝﴾

The explanation:

(9- Upon the day when the sky will violently heave.
10- And the mountains will move along [towards the sun.])

The interpretation: The 'heaving': is the swaying to and fro.

[This also is the meaning of the word in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 22: 65

﴿أَلَمْ تَرَ أَنَّ ٱللَّهَ سَخَّرَ لَكُم مَّا فِى ٱلْأَرْضِ وَٱلْفُلْكَ تَجْرِى فِى ٱلْبَحْرِ بِأَمْرِهِۦ وَيُمْسِكُ ٱلسَّمَآءَ أَن تَقَعَ عَلَى ٱلْأَرْضِ إِلَّا بِإِذْنِهِۦٓ ۚ إِنَّ ٱللَّهَ بِٱلنَّاسِ لَرَءُوفٌ رَّحِيمٌ ۝﴾

The explanation: (Have you [Mohammed] not seen how God has made all that is in the earth subjected to you [people], and the ship run on the sea with His decree, and He holds back the sky from falling down upon the earth save with His leave; surely, God is All-Compassionate [and] Most Merciful to people.)

The interpretation: (Save with His leave); this is an exception. It means: until before Doomsday; because God - be exalted – will permit it to fall on the earth [at that time], and the word 'sky' means the gaseous layers.

Repentance Will not Be Accepted on That Day

Dear reader, you have to know when that time will come, and such portents as:

- The fixation of Moon – as a full moon, its cleavage and its attraction by the Sun gravitation,
- The standstill of the Earth from rotation,

- The everlasting of the night in one hemisphere, and the everlasting of the day in the other side,
- Moving of the meteorites towards the Sun
- And the rest of the extraordinary signs; then at that time the way to repentance will be closed and the repentance of any infidel, disbeliever and wrong-doers will not be accepted.

Therefore, any wise man should repent from today, and return obedient to his Lord, and ask His forgiveness for all his past sins.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 6: 158

﴿يَوْمَ يَأْتِى بَعْضُ ءَايَٰتِ رَبِّكَ لَا يَنفَعُ نَفْسًا إِيمَٰنُهَا لَمْ تَكُنْ ءَامَنَتْ مِن قَبْلُ أَوْ كَسَبَتْ فِىٓ إِيمَٰنِهَا خَيْرًا ۗ قُلِ ٱنتَظِرُوٓا۟ إِنَّا مُنتَظِرُونَ ۝﴾

The explanation: (On the day [that] one of your Lord's portents[1] comes, it shall not profit a soul to believe that never believed before, or earned some good in his belief. Say: 'Wait you[2], [associaters, and see; for] we [too] are waiting.)

The interpretation: The 'portents' means the miracles, which are the extraordinary events. That is because Quraish asked Prophet Mohammed to do some miracles or extraordinary events, then this Quranic aya was revealed.

The portents that will come on that day: the first one of them will be the standstill of the earth from its rotation, then the fixation of the moon, then its cleavage, then its attraction towards the sun by the gravitation of the latter, …etc.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 10: 21

---

(1) It means: a sign or a portent of the approach of the Day of Judgment; it is the cleavage of the Moon.

(2) i.e. We too are waiting your death in order to punish you, so which of us has a nearer hour of death.

﴿وَيَقُولُونَ لَوْلَآ أُنزِلَ عَلَيْهِ ءَايَةٌ مِّن رَّبِّهِۦ ۖ فَقُلْ إِنَّمَا ٱلْغَيْبُ لِلَّهِ فَٱنتَظِرُوٓا۟ إِنِّى مَعَكُم مِّنَ ٱلْمُنتَظِرِينَ ﴿٢٠﴾﴾

The explanation: (They say: 'If only a portent [: a universe miracle] be sent down on him from his Lord!' Then say [to them, O Mohammed:] 'The fore-future belongs to God; so await [such portents]; I shall be with you one of those awaiting.'

The interpretation: (So await) means: Wait, O people, for the occurrence of the signs or portents, which will be in the last of the Time (or in the Last Days. [1]) One of the signs, which Quraish, the tribe of Prophet Mohammed, asked for, was the cleavage of the moon, so that God promised that it will occur in the Last Days, i.e. when the earth will stop its rotation around itself.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 41: 53

﴿سَنُرِيهِمْ ءَايَٰتِنَا فِى ٱلْءَافَاقِ وَفِىٓ أَنفُسِهِمْ حَتَّىٰ يَتَبَيَّنَ لَهُمْ أَنَّهُ ٱلْحَقُّ ۗ أَوَلَمْ يَكْفِ بِرَبِّكَ أَنَّهُۥ عَلَىٰ كُلِّ شَىْءٍ شَهِيدٌ ﴿٥٣﴾﴾

The explanation: (We will show them our portents [or signs] on the horizons [of the sky] and among themselves, until it will become manifest to them that [the Quran] is the truth. Is it not enough that your Lord [O Mohammed] does witness all things?)

The interpretation:

- (We will show them Our portents [or signs] on the horizons [of the sky]) means: the portents or the signs which have just been mentioned, like the fixation of Moon and its cleavage, and the other extraordinary events.
- (And among themselves) means: and We shall show them one of Our signs among them; i.e. it will descend into them, and it is one of them, of their like and their language; that is the **'Awaited Mehdi'**, who is called the

(1) i.e. the terminal period of the World, that is before Doomsday.

'Paraclete' in the Gospel [and is the same **Elia** that will be raised in the last days; as in the Hebrew Bible. Elia in Hebrew is the synonym of Ali in Arabic; the name of the Awaited Mehdi is Mohammed-Ali.]

[We find in the Gospel, that Jesus Christ – peace be on him – will send the paraclete for the other sheep. Therefore, the 'Mehdi' as called in Islamic references is the same 'Paraclete' in the Gospel. The Mehdi or the Paraclete is the apostle of the Christ, i.e. he is the man that will interpret the Scriptures and give the correct meaning of the Old and New Testaments (or the Hebrew Bible and the Gospel) in addition to the Quran.]

Therefore, (and among themselves): This sign is the Mehdi or the Paraclete who will teach and guide them, and explain the Quranic revelations that are mysterious to them, so that the signs will be both scientific and practical; the sign of the Mehdi or the Paraclete is a scientific one; while the signs which will appear on the horizons will be practical. Then God -be exalted – said: حَتَّىٰ يَتَبَيَّنَ لَهُمْ أَنَّهُ الْحَقُّ i.e. (until it will become manifest to them that [the Quran] is the truth) means: until it will be clear to them that the Quran is revealed from God, and that Mohammed did not forge or invent it, as do some of them claim.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 21: 37

﴿خُلِقَ ٱلْإِنسَٰنُ مِنْ عَجَلٍ ۚ سَأُورِيكُمْ ءَايَٰتِى فَلَا تَسْتَعْجِلُونِ ﴿٣٧﴾﴾

The explanation: (Man is created from a hastening [semen.] I shall show you my portents, but ask me not to hasten.)

The interpretation: (I shall show you My portents) means: those signs which will appear in the last days of the Time; and they are the extraordinary events, which have just been mentioned.

Falling of the Comets Down upon the Earth

We said that any hot object is attracting, and any cold object is attracted. However, the Earth at the present time is a hot object, even though its surface is cold, but the coldness of its surface is nothing in comparison with the heat of its core.

Comets are flaming and fire objects; therefore, there is no attraction between the Earth and the comets except very little. But, obviously, when the centre of the Earth will become cold, it will be exposed [more] to the falling down of comets; because it will have become a cold object. Comets are fire objects; so that whenever a comet comes and approaches towards the sky of the Earth, it will fall down upon it; because the comet will try to pull the Earth but it cannot succeed; because the Earth is much bigger; so it will fall down upon it. This will be very dangerous and disastrous to the inhabitants of Earth on that day, and a large number of people will die because of the falling of comets down upon the Earth.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 53: 1-2

﴿وَٱلنَّجۡمِ إِذَا هَوَىٰ ۝١ مَا ضَلَّ صَاحِبُكُمۡ وَمَا غَوَىٰ ۝٢﴾

The explanation:

(1- By the star [or the comet] when it will fall down [upon the earth!]

2- Your comrade [Mohammed] has not strayed away [from the right way], neither has he seduced [anyone with his preaching.])

The 'star', here, means the comet, while His saying -be exalted - إِذَا هَوَىٰ i.e. (when it will fall down) means: when the comet will fall down [upon the earth!]

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 56: 75-76

﴿فَلَآ أُقۡسِمُ بِمَوَٰقِعِ ٱلنُّجُومِ ۝٧٥ وَإِنَّهُۥ لَقَسَمٞ لَّوۡ تَعۡلَمُونَ عَظِيمٌ ۝٧٦﴾

The explanation:

(75- But no! I swear by the multiple falling down of the stars [: site and time!]

76- And that, surely, is a serious oath, did you but know [it.])

This is a threatening oath; and its interpretation is: By comets, and by the time and place at which they will fall down.

-- (And that, surely, is a serious oath, did you but know [it.]) means: It will be a greatly dangerous event and a disastrous

calamity, specially when you know what destruction and ruining it will cause; therefore, you have to believe and convert and you should abandon the worship of idols.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 55: 6

﴿وَٱلنَّجۡمُ وَٱلشَّجَرُ يَسۡجُدَانِ ۝٦﴾

The explanation: (The [tailed-] stars and trees fall down [in adoration, being faraway and nearby objects.])

The 'falling down in adoration', here, is the obedience and falling down upon the Earth.

God -be exalted – said also in the Quran, 41: 13

﴿فَإِنۡ أَعۡرَضُواْ فَقُلۡ أَنذَرۡتُكُمۡ صَٰعِقَةٗ مِّثۡلَ صَٰعِقَةِ عَادٖ وَثَمُودَ ۝١٣﴾

The explanation: (But if they turn away [from you, Mohammed, in aversion], then say, 'I warn you [then] of a thunder-bolt like the thunder-bolt of Aad and Thamood.')

The 'thunder-bolt' or 'calamity', here, is some kind of ruining torment [that strikes them] like the cleavage, storm, earthquake and fire. So the 'thunder-bolt' is a fire that comes down from the sky [and strikes them.]

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 52: 45-46

﴿فَذَرۡهُمۡ حَتَّىٰ يُلَٰقُواْ يَوۡمَهُمُ ٱلَّذِي فِيهِ يُصۡعَقُونَ ۝٤٥
يَوۡمَ لَا يُغۡنِي عَنۡهُمۡ كَيۡدُهُمۡ شَيۡـٔٗا وَلَا هُمۡ يُنصَرُونَ ۝٤٦﴾

The explanation: (45- So forsake them [after you, Mohammed, have warned them] till they will encounter their day, in which they will [die, then] be shocked [with punishment.]) Or (… in which they will be thunder-stricken.) 46- The day when their guile shall avail them naught and they shall not be helped.)

God -be exalted – said, also, in the Quran, 37: 176-177

﴿أَفَبِعَذَابِنَا يَسۡتَعۡجِلُونَ ۝١٧٦ فَإِذَا نَزَلَ بِسَاحَتِهِمۡ فَسَآءَ صَبَاحُ ٱلۡمُنذَرِينَ ۝١٧٧﴾

The explanation:

(176- Do they [indeed] seek to hurry on our punishment?

177- But when the [messenger] will come to their country-yard, and then it will be a hapless morning for those that are warned.)

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 11: 8

﴿وَلَئِنۡ أَخَّرۡنَا عَنۡهُمُ ٱلۡعَذَابَ إِلَىٰٓ أُمَّةٖ مَّعۡدُودَةٖ لَّيَقُولُنَّ مَا يَحۡبِسُهُۥٓۗ أَلَا يَوۡمَ يَأۡتِيهِمۡ لَيۡسَ مَصۡرُوفًا عَنۡهُمۡ وَحَاقَ بِهِم مَّا كَانُواْ بِهِۦ يَسۡتَهۡزِءُونَ ٨﴾

The explanation: (And if We delay for them the punishment to a schismatic [future] generation, they will surely say: What withholds it? But on the day when it will come upon them, it will not be averted from them, but that will surround them [the punishment] at which they mocked.)

The interpretation:(it will not be averted from them) means: It will not be driven away from them, as had it been driven away from the people of Nineveh [at the time of Prophet Jonah]; because the comets will fall down upon the earth on that day.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 77: 8

﴿فَإِذَا ٱلنُّجُومُ طُمِسَتۡ ٨﴾

The explanation: (So when the [tailed-] stars [: the comets] are immersed [into the earth.])

It means: The comets, after falling on the earth, will be dipped down inside it.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran,81 15-16

﴿فَلَآ أُقۡسِمُ بِٱلۡخُنَّسِ ١٥ ٱلۡجَوَارِ ٱلۡكُنَّسِ ١٦﴾

The explanation:

15- But [should] I swear by [the comets] that are [now] slinking back!

16- The moving along, the swept [in the future] into their dens!)

Therefore, those 'that are [now] slinking back' means: the comets because they, nowadays, are hiding from our eye-sight, while – before Doomsday – they will be swept into the earth; i.e. they will resort to the earth and disappear inside it.

So comets are the opposite of meteorites; because meteorites remain on the surface of the earth after their falling upon it, while comets disappear inside it; because they are flaming and fire objects.

Their falling down will be on the side of the everlasting night and on the evening-glow zone; because these two zones will be cold, so the attraction will be between them and the comets more than the attraction with the side [or the hemisphere] of the everlasting day; because the heat causes a repelling between the earth and the comets.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 84: 16-17

﴿فَلَآ أُقۡسِمُ بِٱلشَّفَقِ ١٦ وَٱلَّيۡلِ وَمَا وَسَقَ ١٧﴾

The explanation:

(16- But no, I swear by the twilight [zone: the zone intermediate between the day zone and the night zone!]

17- And by the night and [by] all [the beasts] that it will round up!)

God - be exalted – swore by the everlasting night, which will appear when the earth will stop its axial rotation, and He swore by the evening-glow which is the region between the night and the day; that is because of the falling down of many comets upon them.

[The Oath or Swearing in the Quran:]

Question: What is the meaning of His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, فلا أُقۡسِمُ i.e. (But no, I swear)? Why didn't He say: I swear by the multiple falling down of the stars; for we did not hear, in the Arabs language, such an oath, neither in their literature, nor even in their poetry?

Answer: I shall give you a rule, by which you can know the oath that is mentioned in the Quran.

The oath in the Quran divides into two groups: in present tense and in past tense; i.e. God - be celebrated His praise – swears once by an event happened in the past; while other times,

177- But when the [messenger] will come to their country-yard, and then it will be a hapless morning for those that are warned.)

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 11: 8

﴿وَلَئِنْ أَخَّرْنَا عَنْهُمُ ٱلْعَذَابَ إِلَىٰٓ أُمَّةٍ مَّعْدُودَةٍ لَّيَقُولُنَّ مَا يَحْبِسُهُۥٓ ۗ أَلَا يَوْمَ يَأْتِيهِمْ لَيْسَ مَصْرُوفًا عَنْهُمْ وَحَاقَ بِهِم مَّا كَانُوا۟ بِهِۦ يَسْتَهْزِءُونَ ۝٨﴾

The explanation: (And if We delay for them the punishment to a schismatic [future] generation, they will surely say: What withholds it? But on the day when it will come upon them, it will not be averted from them, but that will surround them [the punishment] at which they mocked.)

The interpretation:(it will not be averted from them) means: It will not be driven away from them, as had it been driven away from the people of Nineveh [at the time of Prophet Jonah]; because the comets will fall down upon the earth on that day.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 77: 8

﴿فَإِذَا ٱلنُّجُومُ طُمِسَتْ ۝٨﴾

The explanation: (So when the [tailed-] stars [: the comets] are immersed [into the earth.])

It means: The comets, after falling on the earth, will be dipped down inside it.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran,81 15-16

﴿فَلَآ أُقْسِمُ بِٱلْخُنَّسِ ۝١٥ ٱلْجَوَارِ ٱلْكُنَّسِ ۝١٦﴾

The explanation:

15- But [should] I swear by [the comets] that are [now] slinking back!

16- The moving along, the swept [in the future] into their dens!)

Therefore, those 'that are [now] slinking back' means: the comets because they, nowadays, are hiding from our eye-sight, while – before Doomsday – they will be swept into the earth; i.e. they will resort to the earth and disappear inside it.

So comets are the opposite of meteorites; because meteorites remain on the surface of the earth after their falling upon it, while comets disappear inside it; because they are flaming and fire objects.

Their falling down will be on the side of the everlasting night and on the evening-glow zone; because these two zones will be cold, so the attraction will be between them and the comets more than the attraction with the side [or the hemisphere] of the everlasting day; because the heat causes a repelling between the earth and the comets.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 84: 16-17

﴿فَلَآ أُقْسِمُ بِٱلشَّفَقِ ۝١٦ وَٱلَّيْلِ وَمَا وَسَقَ ۝١٧﴾

The explanation:

(16- But no, I swear by the twilight [zone: the zone intermediate between the day zone and the night zone!]

17- And by the night and [by] all [the beasts] that it will round up!)

God - be exalted – swore by the everlasting night, which will appear when the earth will stop its axial rotation, and He swore by the evening-glow which is the region between the night and the day; that is because of the falling down of many comets upon them.

[The Oath or Swearing in the Quran:]

Question: What is the meaning of His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, فَلَا أُقْسِمُ i.e. (But no, I swear)? Why didn't He say: I swear by the multiple falling down of the stars; for we did not hear, in the Arabs language, such an oath, neither in their literature, nor even in their poetry?

Answer: I shall give you a rule, by which you can know the oath that is mentioned in the Quran.

The oath in the Quran divides into two groups: in present tense and in past tense; i.e. God - be celebrated His praise – swears once by an event happened in the past; while other times,

He swears by an event that has not occurred yet, but which will take place later on.

The oath, generally, is a threatening one, so that:

(1) The past [oath] means: If you do not believe, I will punish you, just as had I punished those [nations] before you [when they denied their apostles.] This is every oath preceded by the Arabic letter (و) i.e. the word 'By', like His saying -be exalted - in theQuran,86: 1-3

﴿وَٱلسَّمَآءِ وَٱلطَّارِقِ ۝١ وَمَآ أَدۡرَىٰكَ مَا ٱلطَّارِقُ ۝٢ ٱلنَّجۡمُ ٱلثَّاقِبُ ۝٣﴾

The explanation:

(1- [I swear] by the sky [of Nineveh] and [its] 'night visitant'!

2-But can you imagine what a 'night visitant' [that was!?]

3-It was the [tailed-] star of sharp brilliancy [: the flaming comet.])

The 'star of sharp brilliancy'; God sent it on the inhabitants of Nineveh, when they did not believe. The interpretation: If you do not believe in Mohammed, I will send on you one of the comets, just as did I send – in the past – on the people of Nineveh, when they disbelieved and denied Prophet Jonah.]

Likewise is every oath preceded by the Arabic letter (و) i.e. the word 'By.'

(2) [The future oath]: While the second type is a threatening by an event of a torment, which will take place later on.

A- It is every oath preceded by the Arabic word فلا i.e. (But no) or (But shouldn't) or a similar translation; like His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 81: 15-16

﴿فَلَآ أُقۡسِمُ بِٱلۡخُنَّسِ ۝١٥ ٱلۡجَوَارِ ٱلۡكُنَّسِ ۝١٦﴾

The explanation:

(15- But [should] I swear by [the comets] that are [now] slinking back!

16- The moving along, the swept [in the future] into their dens!)

And like His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 56: 75-76

﴿فَلَآ أُقۡسِمُ بِمَوَٰقِعِ ٱلنُّجُومِ ۝٧٥ وَإِنَّهُۥ لَقَسَمٞ لَّوۡ تَعۡلَمُونَ عَظِيمٌ ۝٧٦﴾

The explanation:

(75- But no! I swear by the multiple falling down of the stars [: site and time!]

76- And that, surely, is a serious oath, did you but know [it.])

This, also, is a threatening oath, which means: If you do not believe in Mohammed, then I will send on you some of the future torment that I have told you about.

B- Or the oath is preceded by the word لا i.e. (No), like His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 75: 1-2

﴿لَآ أُقۡسِمُ بِيَوۡمِ ٱلۡقِيَٰمَةِ ۝١ وَلَآ أُقۡسِمُ بِٱلنَّفۡسِ ٱللَّوَّامَةِ ۝٢﴾

The explanation:

(1- No, but I [: God] swear by the Doomsday!

2- And no, but I [: God] swear by the 'censuring soul' [: the Paraclete!][1])

This is a threatening oath and a promise by the occurrence of the torment in the future; because Doomsday has not come yet.

C- Or the Arabic word إذا i.e. (when), is mentioned after the oath; like His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 91: 1-2

﴿وَٱلشَّمۡسِ وَضُحَىٰهَا ۝١ وَٱلۡقَمَرِ إِذَا تَلَىٰهَا ۝٢﴾

The explanation:

(1- [I swear] by the sun and the severe heat of its noon-time!

---

(1) The censuring soul means the 'Paraclete', mentioned in the Gospel, who will convince the world of sin and of justice and of judgment. John, 16: 7-8

"7- But I tell you the truth, it is expedient to you that I go. For if I go not, the Paraclete will not come to you; but if I go, I will send him to you.

8- And when he is come, he will convince the world of sin and of justice and of judgment."

2- And by the moon when she [: the moon] follows him [: the sun!])

And like His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 92: 1-2

﴿وَٱلَّيۡلِ إِذَا يَغۡشَىٰ ۝١ وَٱلنَّهَارِ إِذَا تَجَلَّىٰ ۝٢﴾

The explanation:

(1- [I swear] by the night, when it shall enshroud [that region of the earth!]

2- And [by] the day, when it shall clear away [the darkness from another region of the earth!])

And like His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 93: 1-2

﴿وَٱلضُّحَىٰ ۝١ وَٱلَّيۡلِ إِذَا سَجَىٰ ۝٢﴾

The explanation:

(1- [I swear] by the severe heat of [the region of] the noon-time!

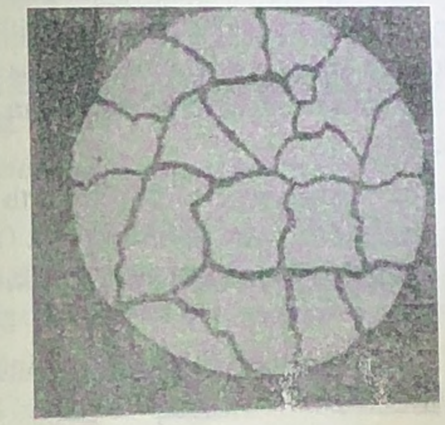
2- And [by] the night when it shall be quiet and everlasting!)

Therefore, these three Quranic revelations are some threatening oaths, by the occurrence of the torment in the future time.

The Sun Will Burst

We said that the life of the Sun will come to an end, and its surface will cool in two thousand years time – just as how had the Earth surface cooled when it had been a sun. At that time, it will become an earth like our Earth; and because its core will be still fiery, then the gases will be continuously emerging, but they will be prevented by the crust from escaping to the outside. For this reason, the Sun will burst and break up into nineteen pieces.

[Diagram 9]



The Sun Will Tear up after the ending of its life and become nineteen pieces

This explosion may be preceded by several local explosions, which will be followed by the general explosion that will break it up into nineteen pieces. That is because the cold crust, forming on the surface of the Sun, will initially be thin, so that the gases, collecting under this crust, will cause a local and limited explosion that will cause a tear through which the gases will escape.

Afterwards, another explosion will occur many years later, and another one moreover, until the crust will get thicker over

the Sun surface. At that time, the explosion will be generalized, and the Sun will become several pieces.

However, many local explosions occurred in the Sun. They were mentioned in a book entitled 'God and the Modern Science', page 47; he said:

"Dr. Thomas Gold of the Greenwich observatory declared that on Feb.23, 1956 an explosion occurred in the Sun; [Was that related to the standstill of Venus from its axial rotation, and the Sun pull its satellites and meteorites and swallowed them? - The translator.] The explosion was equivalent to the violence resulting from exploding one million Hydrogen bombs, and it lead to the heavy bombardment of the earth with cosmic rays. Dr. Thomas Gold said in his declaration that the great increase of the cosmic rays started at 3.45 o'clock a.m. G.M.T., and lasted for two hours.

This increment of cosmic rays, to which Earth was exposed, is considered the greatest increase in history. Dr. Gold described the explosion to occur in an area much larger than that of the Earth globe, and that its violence was beyond imagination.

Afterwards, it was announced that another similar explosion occurred on 20/May/1957.

A bright light is, usually, emitted from such explosions, in addition to ultraviolet rays, Hertz rays and [other] particles thrown out of the Sun.

Twenty hours following the explosion, the greatest magnetic storms took place on the Earth. The observatory of the research centre of the American Air Force declared on 13/March/1959, that there occurred on that day an explosion on the surface of the Sun; for gases emerged from its centre, with a very high temperature exceeding the imagination, with a speed of 3.5 million miles per hour.

While Harvard observatory announced that, as Dr. Donald Mensal the director of the observatory said, the explosion – that took place in the Sun – had been recorded on many films with

the aid of the Cosmographer, which is an instrument for recording the fire and light rays emitted from the Sun. With the aid of this instrument, it was discovered that the violence of the explosion equaled the simultaneous explosion of 100 million Hydrogen bombs, which is one thousand times greater than the Earth gravitational force. In Tokyo, fifty astronomers and geologists met for conversation about their hypotheses concerning the Cosmic Radiations."

After that [generalized explosion] those pieces [of the broken up Sun] will be attracted towards the nearest sun, and revolve around it, then after elapsing of a long time, the surface of those pieces will completely cool, and they will be inhabited. This is how the life of suns will come to an end, so that they break up into new planets.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 81: 1

﴿إِذَا ٱلشَّمْسُ كُوِّرَتْ ۝١﴾

The explanation: (When the sun shall be 'divided into many spheres'[1].)

It means: when it will be torn up into many globes; and this was interpreted in the past pages.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 74: 30

﴿عَلَيْهَا تِسْعَةَ عَشَرَ ۝٣٠﴾

The explanation: ([Imposed] upon it [the attraction of] nineteen [planets.])

It means: Upon it lies the burden of gravitating nineteen planets.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 104: 4-6

﴿كَلَّا لَيُنۢبَذَنَّ فِي ٱلْحُطَمَةِ ۝٤ وَمَآ أَدْرَىٰكَ مَا ٱلْحُطَمَةُ ۝٥ نَارُ ٱللَّهِ ٱلْمُوقَدَةُ﴾

---

(1) i.e. when the sun shall be 'divided into many spheres'; at that time, Doomsday will take place.

The explanation:

(4- By no means, surely he will be thrust into [Hell] 'that will break up to pieces'.

5- And can you imagine that 'which will break up to pieces'?

6- [It is] the Fire of [the wrath of] God, kindled [to a blaze.])

The 'Hutama', i.e. 'that which will break up to pieces', in Arabic, indicates that it will be destroyed. So, God described hell that it will be destroyed, just as did He describe the earth that it will be cracked and broken up, when He - be exalted - said in the Quran, 86:12

﴿وَٱلْأَرْضِ ذَاتِ ٱلصَّدْعِ ﴿١٢﴾﴾

The explanation: (And the earth that [shall] break up.)

And God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 67: 7-8

﴿إِذَآ أُلْقُوا۟ فِيهَا سَمِعُوا۟ لَهَا شَهِيقًا وَهِىَ تَفُورُ ﴿٧﴾ تَكَادُ تَمَيَّزُ مِنَ ٱلْغَيْظِ﴾

The explanation: (When they are cast into it[1], they will hear its roaring[2] – as it boils[3] – As it would tear up [from simmering] with rage.[4])

It means: Hell is about to burst and break up because of the rage; 'hell', actually, is the sun. God -be exalted – said also in the Quran, 31: 29

﴿أَلَمْ تَرَ أَنَّ ٱللَّهَ يُولِجُ ٱلَّيْلَ فِى ٱلنَّهَارِ وَيُولِجُ ٱلنَّهَارَ فِى ٱلَّيْلِ وَسَخَّرَ ٱلشَّمْسَ وَٱلْقَمَرَ كُلٌّ يَجْرِىٓ إِلَىٰٓ أَجَلٍ مُّسَمًّى وَأَنَّ ٱللَّهَ بِمَا تَعْمَلُونَ خَبِيرٌ ﴿٢٩﴾﴾

The explanation: (Have you [Mohammed] not seen how God causes the night to pass into the day, and causes the day to pass into the night, and has subdued the sun and the moon [to do their function]; each running [in its orbit] to an appointed term; and that God is Fully Aware of what you [Muslims] do?)

---

(1) i.e. in Hell.

(2) i.e. which is the sound of the flame and the emerging out of gases.

(3) It boils with the liquids that it contains.

(4) The Arabic word indicates the sound of its boiling.

God - be celebrated and highly exalted - said in the Quran, 39: 5

﴿خَلَقَ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضَ بِٱلْحَقِّ ۖ يُكَوِّرُ ٱلَّيْلَ عَلَى ٱلنَّهَارِ وَيُكَوِّرُ ٱلنَّهَارَ عَلَى ٱلَّيْلِ ۖ وَسَخَّرَ ٱلشَّمْسَ وَٱلْقَمَرَ ۖ كُلٌّ يَجْرِى لِأَجَلٍ مُّسَمًّى ۗ أَلَا هُوَ ٱلْعَزِيزُ ٱلْغَفَّٰرُ ﴿٥﴾﴾

The explanation:(He created the heavens and the earth with the true [promise]; He created the heavens and the earth with the true [promise]; He makes the night spherical on the day, and makes the day spherical on the night, and He subjects the sun and the moon; each running on for an appointed term; surely, He is the All-Mighty, the All-Forgiving.)

God -be exalted – said also in the Quran, 28: 88

﴿كُلُّ شَىْءٍ هَالِكٌ إِلَّا وَجْهَهُۥ ۚ لَهُ ٱلْحُكْمُ وَإِلَيْهِ تُرْجَعُونَ ﴿٨٨﴾﴾

The explanation: (Every [material] thing will perish saving His aspect; the judgment will be [according to] His [will]; and you [all] will be brought back to Him [after your death.])

The interpretation: Every material thing will be disintegrated and will vanish, save the ethereal; they are immortal, and will not die or break up.

The Sky Will Be Filled with Fire and Smoke

We said that the Sun will break up on Doomsday, and obviously if the Sun breaks up, then huge amounts of gases will emerge from it that will fill the atmospheres of the planets. In addition to that, there will emerge from it fire, flame and smoke that will fill the space; this fire will reach to the Earth and the rest of the planets, and that will afflict the souls remaining on the Earth; truly, they cannot be saved from it, that is because the Earth and the other planets will be nearer to the Sun; because their cores will become cold, as it was explained in the past pages.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 44: 10-11

﴿فَٱرۡتَقِبۡ يَوۡمَ تَأۡتِي ٱلسَّمَآءُ بِدُخَانٖ مُّبِينٖ ۝١٠
يَغۡشَى ٱلنَّاسَۖ هَٰذَا عَذَابٌ أَلِيمٞ ۝١١﴾

The explanation: (But watch [O Mohammed] for the day when the sky will bring obvious smoke. That will overwhelm people; this will be a painful torment.)

Therefore, the 'smoke' is that which will emerge from the Sun when it will break up, and this smoke will be a mixture of seven gases.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 55: 35

﴿يُرۡسَلُ عَلَيۡكُمَا شُوَاظٞ مِّن نَّارٖ وَنُحَاسٞ فَلَا تَنتَصِرَانِ ۝٣٥﴾

The explanation: (Against you [: man-kind and demon-kind] shall be loosed [out of the torn up sun] sparks of fire and ominous molten lava; so that you cannot be helped.)

The شواظ is the flame of the fire, this fire that will emerge out of the broken up Sun.

The نحاس is the lava and molten metals and liquids that will emerge from the Sun after its explosion. The word نحاس is derived from the word نحس i.e. misfortune and misfortunate as a singular; the plural is نحسات i.e. unfortunate days.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 41: 16

﴿فَأَرۡسَلۡنَا عَلَيۡهِمۡ رِيحٗا صَرۡصَرٗا فِيٓ أَيَّامٖ نَّحِسَاتٖ﴾

The explanation: (And We sent upon them a raging wind(1) in [some] unfortunate days.)

[This also is the meaning of these two words in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

---

(1) i.e. a violent wind with roaring sound.

The Blowing in the Horn

We said in the past pages that the life of the Sun will come to an end, and its surface will become cold, then the gases emerging from it will remain imprisoned inside its core, and there will be no exit for these gases to get out; then when the gases will increase and accumulate in its core, [they will build an increasing pressure] and will press on the cold layer so it will crack and the gases will start to escape, making a great sound, like that of the [old vapor] train, when they open its vapor valve.

That great sound will continue till the influence of the gases emerging from the site near to that crack will lessen, when the sound will be faint. This will be followed by the rushing of the gases – present inside the core of the Sun – towards that exit to get out through it; for they will have found an exit; the exit will enlarge by their rushing out through it.

By this time, they will have caused a sound louder and greater than the initial one, and this sound will go on until the Sun will burst and break up into nineteen pieces. Obviously, this event will cause a great disharmony in the solar system as a whole; because the Sun is the mother of the planets and it is their attracting object; so that when it will break up, its gravitation will fail to hold the planets, which will slip away and scatter in the space. When this event will take place, the Earth and the rest of the planets will start to tremble and quake. At that time, a great fear and horror will overwhelm their inhabitants, until the Earth will break up and people die; so they [:their souls] will leave it, and souls will ascend through the space to the place of the congregation of souls, and none will remain upon its surface. As such will the rest of the planets be, and their inhabitants will be like the Earth inhabitants.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 35: 41

﴿إِنَّ ٱللَّهَ يُمۡسِكُ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلۡأَرۡضَ أَن تَزُولَاۚ وَلَئِن زَالَتَآ إِنۡ أَمۡسَكَهُمَا مِنۡ أَحَدٖ
مِّنۢ بَعۡدِهِۦٓۚ إِنَّهُۥ كَانَ حَلِيمًا غَفُورٗا﴾

The explanation: (Surely, God holds back the heavens and the earth, that they escape not [the gravitation of the sun]; and if they were to escape [the gravitation of the sun], no one else than Him could hold them. He is Ever Clement [and] Most Forgiving.)

The interpretation:

- (and if they were to escape [the gravitation of the sun]) on Doomsday. It means: And if they were to slip away or escape the gravitation, then can anyone, other than God, hold them back?
- (no one else than Him could hold them); because eventhough the planets will break up, they will not disappear into the space, but will become meteorites attracted to the new planets.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 27: 87

﴿وَيَوْمَ يُنفَخُ فِي ٱلصُّورِ فَفَزِعَ مَن فِي ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَمَن فِي ٱلْأَرْضِ
إِلَّا مَن شَآءَ ٱللَّهُ ۚ وَكُلٌّ أَتَوْهُ دَٰخِرِينَ ﴿٨٧﴾﴾

The explanation: (And on the day when the horn will be blown [, the solar system will break up, so that there will be no day or night,] and all who are in the heavens and all who are in the earth will start in fear, except such as God will please [to exempt]; and all will come to Him humbled [on that day.])

The interpretation: The 'horn' is the cold layer that will form upon the Sun surface, and the blowing will be from its core, and it is the gases, rushing out through the exit or the crack, that will blow in the horn; i.e. the cold crust that will form on the Sun.

- (And all who are in the heavens) means: the gaseous layers which are the dwelling place of 'genies' [or demons].
- (And all who are in the earth) The 'earth', here, means: all of them.

The interpretation: Those who are in the gaseous layers, and those who are in the planets will have a great fear and

horror, then God - be exalted – mentioned an exception: those who dwell in the ethereal layers, i.e. the angels, so He said:

- إِلاَّ مَنْ شَاءَ اللهُ i.e. (Except such as God will please [to exempt])
- (And all will come to Him humbled [on that day.])

It means: Each of 'genies' and 'human beings' will come to Him obedient and yielding.

Actually, the gaseous heavens, here, are mentioned before mentioning the Earth; because God - be exalted – meant to mention those who are dwelling therein; as it is noticed in His saying - be exalted – مَنْ فِي السَّماواتِ و مَنْ فِي الأرضِ i.e. (all who are in the heavens and all who are in the earth.)

That is because 'genies' [or demons] inhabit the gaseous heavens; and God - be exalted – created the genie-beings before the human-beings, that is His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 15: 27

﴿وَٱلْجَآنَّ خَلَقْنَٰهُ مِن قَبْلُ مِن نَّارِ ٱلسَّمُومِ ﴿٢٧﴾﴾

The explanation: (And the Jann had We aforetime created from the fire of the scorching wind.)

God -be exalted – said also in the Quran, 39: 68

﴿وَنُفِخَ فِي ٱلصُّورِ فَصَعِقَ مَن فِي ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَمَن فِي ٱلْأَرْضِ إِلَّا مَن شَآءَ ٱللَّهُ ۖ ثُمَّ
نُفِخَ فِيهِ أُخْرَىٰ فَإِذَا هُمْ قِيَامٌ يَنظُرُونَ﴾

The explanation: (And the 'Horn' will be blown, and those [genies: demons] in the [gaseous] heavens and those [humans] in the earth will be [thunder-] stricken, save [the angels, the prophets and the righteous] whom God pleases. Then it will be blown again, and behold, they will be standing up, waiting [for judgment and requital.])

The interpretation:

- (And those [genies: demons] in the [gaseous] heavens and those [humans] in the earth will be [thunder-] stricken) means: a fire will afflict them, so they will die. The

'heavens', here, and means the gaseous layers; the 'earth' means all of them [or all the earths: all the planets.] The interpretation: a fire will afflict those inhabiting the gaseous heavens and those inhabiting the planets, so that they will die.

- (Save [the angels, the prophets and the righteous] whom God pleases); here God - be exalted – made an exception, i.e. the angels, the prophets and the righteous; who will not be afflicted by that fire or calamity.
- (Then it will be blown again, and behold, they will be standing up, waiting [for judgment and requital.]) It means: They will be awaiting the payment and recompense of their deeds and conduct. So 'they', here, is related to the souls.

The interpretation: Then their souls will be taken out of their bodies, and they will be awaiting the judgment for their deeds. Therefore, in the first blowing, people will have a great fear and will be afflicted by a fire, while in the second, they will die and their souls will be gathered- together for the Judgment.

God - be celebrated His praise - said in the Quran, 69: 13-14

﴿فَإِذَا نُفِخَ فِي ٱلصُّورِ نَفۡخَةٞ وَٰحِدَةٞ ۝١٣
وَحُمِلَتِ ٱلۡأَرۡضُ وَٱلۡجِبَالُ فَدُكَّتَا دَكَّةٗ وَٰحِدَةٗ ۝١٤﴾

The explanation:

(13- So, when the 'Horn' is blown with a single blast.
14- And the earth [together] with the mountains are borne, and crushed with a single crash.)

The interpretation: (with a single blast); this is because the blowing will be continuous from the Sun, so that the two blows as if they are one blow; because the first blow is continuous along with the second.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 74: 8-9

﴿فَإِذَا نُقِرَ فِي ٱلنَّاقُورِ ۝٨ فَذَٰلِكَ يَوۡمَئِذٖ يَوۡمٌ عَسِيرٌ ۝٩﴾

The explanation:

(8- And when the 'percussion [surface: the Horn'] is percussed.
9- That shall, then, be [an indication of] a day of distress.)

The النَّاقُور is the horn, and the sound that will come out of it is by the blowing of the gases through it.

While His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 69: 14

﴿وَحُمِلَتِ ٱلۡأَرۡضُ وَٱلۡجِبَالُ فَدُكَّتَا دَكَّةٗ وَٰحِدَةٗ ۝١٤﴾

The explanation: (And the earth [together] with the mountains are borne, and crushed with a single crash.) Means: They will simultaneously break up. The interpretation: The planets and the mountains will be broken up and destroyed at the same time.

Some people say that the 'Horn', here, is the trumpet into which the angel Israfel will blow on Doomsday, so that a very great and loud sound will come out which people will hear and gather around him!

I say that these words are not correct, and Muslims, actually, narrated them from Jews. There are no trumpets for angels to blow into them; because angels are ethereal; and ethereal creatures cannot blow into trumpets.

Now suppose that we bring the biggest trumpet in the earth, and we put this trumpet at Baghdad [the capital city in the middle of Iraq], and we blow into it; then are the people of Mosul [a big city in the north of Iraq] or Basra [a big city in the south of Iraq] going to hear it? The answer is: no.

Another example: Let us forget about the trumpet, and consider something greater than it, which is the thunder. Now if the thunder sound comes out at Baghdad, are the people of Mosul and Basra going to hear it? The answer is: no. Then how can the inhabitants of all the planets hear the sound of the trumpet; so that they will be in a great fear and horror, and will be afflicted by this calamity, in spite of that the sound of the

trumpet is lower than the sound of the thunder? While God - be celebrated His praise - said in the Quran, 27: 87

﴿وَيَوْمَ يُنفَخُ فِي ٱلصُّورِ فَفَزِعَ مَن فِي ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَمَن فِي ٱلْأَرْضِ﴾

The explanation: (And on the day when the horn will be blown [, the solar system will break up, so that there will be no day or night,] and all who are in the heavens and all who are in the earth will start in fear)

The Earthquake [of Doomsday]

After the surface of the Sun will have cracked, and the sound will have issued, then the Earth will start its trembling and quaking until it will break up.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 22: 1-2

﴿يَٰٓأَيُّهَا ٱلنَّاسُ ٱتَّقُواْ رَبَّكُمْ ۚ إِنَّ زَلْزَلَةَ ٱلسَّاعَةِ شَيْءٌ عَظِيمٌ ۝١ يَوْمَ تَرَوْنَهَا تَذْهَلُ كُلُّ مُرْضِعَةٍ عَمَّآ أَرْضَعَتْ وَتَضَعُ كُلُّ ذَاتِ حَمْلٍ حَمْلَهَا وَتَرَى ٱلنَّاسَ سُكَٰرَىٰ وَمَا هُم بِسُكَٰرَىٰ وَلَٰكِنَّ عَذَابَ ٱللَّهِ شَدِيدٌ ۝٢﴾

The explanation:

(1- O mankind, guard yourselves against your Lord's [punishment]; [for surely] the earthquake of the Hour is a tremendous thing.

2- On the day you will see it, [O mankind], every suckling woman will be scared away from [the child] which she has suckled, and every pregnant woman will deliver her burden; and you [man] will see men drunken, yet they be not drunken; but dreadful will be the chastisement of God.)

The interpretation:

- (O mankind, guard yourselves against your Lord'[s punishment]; [for surely] the earthquake of the Hour is a tremendous thing.) It means: a great disaster and calamity that will afflict the souls. The 'Hour' is the Doomsday;

﴿إِذَا زُلْزِلَتِ ٱلْأَرْضُ زِلْزَالَهَا ۝١ وَأَخْرَجَتِ ٱلْأَرْضُ أَثْقَالَهَا ۝٢﴾

The explanation: ([The Doomsday will be there, when these events will occur:]

1- When Earth shall be violently quaked!

2- And Earth shall expel its heavy [insufferable, wicked persons!])

- (On the day you will see it [O mankind]) means: you will see the quaking of the Earth, and see that event, after which the Earth and the solar system will be destroyed; at that time Doomsday will take place. At that time:
- (Every suckling woman will be scared away from [the child] which she has suckled, and every pregnant woman will deliver her burden)

Here, God -be exalted – has told about the calamities of the Day of Doom, and what will take place at that time of cosmic disturbances and the fear and horror; so that every pregnant woman in the terrestrial planets will be scared away from her baby and will not pay attention to him; that is because of the fear and torment that will afflict her; so that she will be concerned with herself rather than anyone else, and every pregnant woman will abort her fetus; that is because of the suffering and torment afflicting them.

- (And you [man] will see men drunken) because of the extreme terror and pain.
- (Yet they be not drunken; but dreadful will be the chastisement of God.)

As regards the inhabitants of Earth, they will die before Doomsday, and that will be after the standstill of the Earth from its axial rotation, and no alive being will survive, save some inhabitants of the evening-glow zone. But as regards the terrestrial planets that are bigger than our Earth, some alive beings will survive [till Doomsday]; because these planets will go on in their axial rotation till Doomsday when they will be

afflicted, together with the Earth, by trembling and quaking initially, and later by destruction and breaking up.

God –be highly exalted - said in the Quran, 73: 14

﴿يَوْمَ تَرْجُفُ ٱلْأَرْضُ وَٱلْجِبَالُ وَكَانَتِ ٱلْجِبَالُ كَثِيبًا مَّهِيلًا ﴿١٤﴾﴾

The explanation: (And on the day when the earth and the mountains shall quake, and priorily the mountains shall become a heaping mass of sand.)

The interpretation: The planets together with their mountains will tremble and quake.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 99: 1-2

﴿إِذَا زُلْزِلَتِ ٱلْأَرْضُ زِلْزَالَهَا ﴿١﴾ وَأَخْرَجَتِ ٱلْأَرْضُ أَثْقَالَهَا ﴿٢﴾﴾

The explanation:

([The Doomsday will be there, when these events will occur:]
1-When Earth shall be violently quaked!
2-And Earth shall expel its heavy [insufferable, wicked persons!])

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 79: 6-7

﴿يَوْمَ تَرْجُفُ ٱلرَّاجِفَةُ ﴿٦﴾ تَتْبَعُهَا ٱلرَّادِفَةُ ﴿٧﴾﴾

The explanation:

(6- On the day when the earthquake occurs.
7- Which the following [calamity: the tearing-up of the earth] shall succeed.)

It means: The second calamity will follow and come after it, which is the breaking up of the Earth. The first is the Earthquake, and the second is its breaking up and dispersion of its parts into the space.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 56: 1-6

﴿إِذَا وَقَعَتِ ٱلْوَاقِعَةُ ﴿١﴾ لَيْسَ لِوَقْعَتِهَا كَاذِبَةٌ ﴿٢﴾ خَافِضَةٌ رَّافِعَةٌ ﴿٣﴾
إِذَا رُجَّتِ ٱلْأَرْضُ رَجًّا ﴿٤﴾ وَبُسَّتِ ٱلْجِبَالُ بَسًّا ﴿٥﴾ فَكَانَتْ هَبَآءً مُّنۢبَثًّا ﴿٦﴾﴾

The explanation:

(1-When the inevitable [event of the Doomsday] occurs, [what is your fate then, O denier!]

2- None can tell that its occurrence is a lie.
3- Depressing, elevating [of the solar system.]
4- When the earth will be shaken with [severe] shaking.
5- And the mountains shall be ground with fine grinding.
6- And convert into dispersed dust.)

The interpretation:

The 'inevitable event', which will take place on that day, is the breaking up of the solar system.

(Depressing, elevating [of the solar system.]) Means: It depresses one object and elevates another one; i.e. it disturbs the order and harmony, and makes it upside down; because it will break the Sun up into planets, and break up the planets into meteorites, and smash the meteorites into dust and so on.

Then God - be exalted – explained when that inevitable event will occur, so He said:

﴿إِذَا رُجَّتِ ٱلْأَرْضُ رَجًّا﴾

i.e. (When the earth will be shaken with [severe] shaking.)
It means: when the earth will vigorously quake.

﴿وَبُسَّتِ ٱلْجِبَالُ بَسًّا﴾

i.e. (And the mountains shall be ground with fine grinding.)

﴿فَكَانَتْ هَبَآءً مُّنۢبَثًّا﴾

i.e. (And convert into dispersed dust.)
It means: and become dust scattered upon the Earth.

The Planets Will Break up

["**26- In the beginning, O Lord, You founded the earth: and the heavens are the works of your hands.**

27- They shall perish but you remain: and all of them shall grow old like a garment: And as vesture you shall change them, and they shall be changed.

28- But You are always the selfsame: and Your years shall not fail." - the Psalm 101: 26-28

"Heavens and earth shall pass; but my words shall not pass." - the Gospel according to Matthew, chapter 24: 35]

We said, in the past pages, that when the attracted object loses its gravitational power, it would cleave and break up. We said also that the life of the Sun will come to an end, and it will tear up on Doomsday. Then, evidently, its parts will scatter in the space, and the order will be disturbed, then its gravitational [influence] upon the planets will be lost.

In such condition, the present planets will be destroyed and broken up, and will be dispersed in the space in the form of meteorites, just like the meteorites present nowadays; they had – previously – been planets in the ancient times, but after their Doomsday they broke up into meteorites.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 82: 1-2

﴿إِذَا ٱلسَّمَآءُ ٱنفَطَرَتْ ۝١ وَإِذَا ٱلْكَوَاكِبُ ٱنتَثَرَتْ ۝٢﴾

The explanation:

([These shall be some of the signs of Doomsday:]

1- When the sky shall split open.

2- And when the [terrestrial] planets [shall break up into pieces that] shall be strewn about [in the space to be meteorites.])

The 'planets' means, in particular, the terrestrial planets; for the word كوكب in Arabic means a wandering star or a terrestrial planet.

The **interpretation:** When the terrestrial planets will be broken up, and their pieces will be scattered and dispersed in the space.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 13: 31

﴿وَلَوْ أَنَّ قُرْءَانًا سُيِّرَتْ بِهِ ٱلْجِبَالُ أَوْ قُطِّعَتْ بِهِ ٱلْأَرْضُ أَوْ كُلِّمَ بِهِ ٱلْمَوْتَىٰ ۗ بَل لِّلَّهِ ٱلْأَمْرُ جَمِيعًا﴾

The **explanation:** (If there were a Quran with which mountains were moved, or the earth were cut up, or the dead were made to speak; but the decision as a whole is due to God.)

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 19: 90-91

﴿تَكَادُ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتُ يَتَفَطَّرْنَ مِنْهُ وَتَنشَقُّ ٱلْأَرْضُ وَتَخِرُّ ٱلْجِبَالُ هَدًّا ۝٩٠ أَن دَعَوْا۟ لِلرَّحْمَٰنِ وَلَدًا ۝٩١﴾

The **explanation:** (Because of it, the heavens are about to crack, the earth splits asunder and the mountains fall crushed; that they attributed to the Most Gracious a son!)

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 50: 44

﴿يَوْمَ تَشَقَّقُ ٱلْأَرْضُ عَنْهُمْ سِرَاعًا ۚ ذَٰلِكَ حَشْرٌ عَلَيْنَا يَسِيرٌ ۝٤٤﴾

The **explanation:** (On the day when the earth will split up [and part] off them, hastening forth [they will come] – that will be a gathering together, which will be quite easy to Us [to make.])

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 86: 11-12

﴿وَٱلسَّمَآءِ ذَاتِ ٱلرَّجْعِ ۝١١ وَٱلْأَرْضِ ذَاتِ ٱلصَّدْعِ ۝١٢﴾

The **explanation**:

(11- By the sky [: the gaseous heavens] that shall return back [to its initial state of smoke.]

12- And the earth that [shall] break up.)

So God - be exalted – described the earth by the cleaving or breaking up.

The interpretation: It was cleft or broken up in the ancient times and become nine pieces, after being one mass, and it will cleave or break up, on Doomsday, and become many pieces or fragments scattered in the space.

God – be exalted – said in the Quran, 69: 13-15

﴿فَإِذَا نُفِخَ فِي ٱلصُّورِ نَفۡخَةٞ وَٰحِدَةٞ ۝١٣

وَحُمِلَتِ ٱلۡأَرۡضُ وَٱلۡجِبَالُ فَدُكَّتَا دَكَّةٗ وَٰحِدَةٗ ۝١٤ فَيَوۡمَئِذٖ وَقَعَتِ ٱلۡوَاقِعَةُ ۝١٥﴾

The explanation:

(13- So, when the 'Horn' is blown with a single blast.

14- And the earth [together] with the mountains are borne, and crushed with a single crash.

15- On that day will the inevitable [event of Doomsday] occur.)

The 'earth', here, means all of them, i.e. the Earth together with the rest of the planets, and His saying -be exalted - فَدُكَّتَا دَكَّةٗ وَٰحِدَةٗ i.e. (and crushed with a single crash.)

It means: They will simultaneously be broken up; like His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 7: 143 فَلَمَّا تَجَلَّىٰ رَبُّهُۥ لِلۡجَبَلِ جَعَلَهُۥ دَكّٗا وَخَرَّ مُوسَىٰ صَعِقٗا

The explanation: (And when his Lord revealed His glory to the mountain, He crushed it up completely, and Moses fell down swooning, seized by the thunderbolt.)

It means: God caused the mountain to break up and to be smashed. [This also is the meaning of the word in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 89: 21-22

﴿كَلَّآ إِذَا دُكَّتِ ٱلۡأَرۡضُ دَكّٗا دَكّٗا ۝٢١ وَجَآءَ رَبُّكَ وَٱلۡمَلَكُ صَفّٗا صَفّٗا ۝٢٢﴾

The explanation:

(21- Not at all; but when the earth is demolished to pieces.

22- And [the judging of people by] your Lord [will] have come, and the angels will stand in rows [awaiting for the command of their Lord.])

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 67: 16

﴿ءَأَمِنتُم مَّن فِي ٱلسَّمَآءِ أَن يَخۡسِفَ بِكُمُ ٱلۡأَرۡضَ فَإِذَا هِيَ تَمُورُ ۝١٦﴾

The explanation: (Do you [people] feel secure that [God] Who is in heaven will not cleave the earth with you, [as did He cleave another earth with its people before you], so that it then [shall] violently heave.)

The خَسْف in Arabic means the cleavage, and it is the calamity that afflicts the object, so that it will destroy or degrade it.

The مَوْر in Arabic means the rolling or waving to and fro.

The interpretation: Have you taken security from Him Who is in the heaven: He is God – be highly exalted and be celebrated His praise – that He may not cleave and tear up the Earth with you, so that its parts will roll about or move about in the space, i.e. they will float and swim in the space; because they will become meteorites.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 46: 3

﴿مَا خَلَقۡنَا ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلۡأَرۡضَ وَمَا بَيۡنَهُمَآ إِلَّا بِٱلۡحَقِّ وَأَجَلٖ مُّسَمّٗى﴾

The explanation: (We created not the heavens and the earth and [all] that is between them save with the true [promise of destruction and Doomsday] and for a destined end.)

So, God - be exalted and glorified – explained that He had created the planets, and dated for them an appointed time, and that their lives will not be for ever.

God -be exalted – said also in the Quran, 30: 8

﴿أَوَلَمۡ يَتَفَكَّرُواْ فِيٓ أَنفُسِهِمۗ مَّا خَلَقَ ٱللَّهُ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلۡأَرۡضَ وَمَا بَيۡنَهُمَآ إِلَّا بِٱلۡحَقِّ

وَأَجَلٖ مُّسَمّٗىۗ وَإِنَّ كَثِيرٗا مِّنَ ٱلنَّاسِ بِلِقَآيِٕ رَبِّهِمۡ لَكَٰفِرُونَ ۝٨﴾

The explanation: (Have they not contemplated within themselves [that] God created not the heavens and the earth and

that between them but with the true [promise of destroying them on Doomsday], and for a destined end. And, truly, of mankind are unbelievers in the meeting with their Lord.)

In addition, it is mentioned in the Gospel according to Matthew, chapter 24: 35; Jesus Christ said to his disciples: "**Heavens and earth shall pass; but my words shall not pass.**"

Moreover, it is mentioned in the Psalm 101:

"26- In the beginning, O Lord, You founded the earth: and the heavens are the works of your hands.

27- they shall perish but you remain: and all of them shall grow old like a garment: And as vesture you shall change them, and they shall be changed.

28- But You are always the selfsame: and your years shall not fail."

[**Comment by the translator:** Such incidents and observations of the earth in the Last Day, like the everlasting day and night, the dryness of rivers and seas, the disappearance of the sweet palatable water, the crushing and grinding of mountains and the filling of the sky by smoke due to the mixing of the gaseous layers, …etc. Such incidents may be seen and observed and studied in Mercury and Venus; because these have stopped the axial rotation, and are now in their Last Day. See "The Traveling to Venus Is Dangerous." In the preceding pages above.]

Mountains Shall Be Dispersed

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 20: 105-107

﴿وَيَسْـَٔلُونَكَ عَنِ ٱلْجِبَالِ فَقُلْ يَنسِفُهَا رَبِّى نَسْفًا ﴿١٠٥﴾
فَيَذَرُهَا قَاعًا صَفْصَفًا ﴿١٠٦﴾ لَّا تَرَىٰ فِيهَا عِوَجًا وَلَآ أَمْتًا ﴿١٠٧﴾﴾

The explanation:

(105- They are asking you [Mohammed] about the mountains [of Mecca on that day.] Say: 'My Lord will smash them [into scattered dust.]

106- So He will leave it as a level plain.

107- Wherein you will see no hill neither any valley.)

The Arabic word قاع means an area of land.

We said, in the past pages, that the Earth would stop its axial rotation, so that in one side there will be an everlasting day, while in the other side there will be an everlasting night. Obviously, the side facing the Sun will have severe heat sufficient to burn out and smash stones and rocks; because most of rocks are formed from calcium carbonate; therefore, if they are heated, carbon dioxide gas will emerge from them, and calcium oxide – which is a white powder – will remain.

Secondly: the falling down of the comets – prior to Doomsday – upon the mountains will lead to their melting away and smashing.

Thirdly: the heat inside the Earth core will diminish gradually, and will put off in the course of time; and by that the parts of the mountains and rocks become fragmented and disintegrated; because the gravitational power will have been finished inside the Earth core. That is because "the sole cause in the formation of the gravitational force is the heat"; for this reason, the mountains will become as sand-hills and become face to face with the factors of denudation and erosion; because the wind will carry away and scatter the dust towards the seas and oceans, and by that the Earth will become wasteland or desolate area where you cannot see any waviness or elevation.

This condition will issue before Doomsday and after the standstill of the Earth from its axial rotation. While on Doomsday, the Earth will break up into meteorites.

God - be celebrated His praise - said in the Quran, 73: 14

﴿يَوْمَ تَرْجُفُ ٱلْأَرْضُ وَٱلْجِبَالُ وَكَانَتِ ٱلْجِبَالُ كَثِيبًا مَّهِيلًا ﴿١٤﴾﴾

The explanation: (And on the day when the earth and the mountains shall quake, and priorily the mountains shall become a heaping mass of sand.)

It means: like sand-hills in which the sand easily sweeps away of their sides with the least movement, and the wind carries it away to the low lands.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 70: 8-9

﴿يَوْمَ تَكُونُ ٱلسَّمَآءُ كَٱلْمُهْلِ ﴿٨﴾ وَتَكُونُ ٱلْجِبَالُ كَٱلْعِهْنِ ﴿٩﴾﴾

The explanation: (The day when the sky shall be as the turbid [boiled] oil [of sesame], and the mountains shall be like [fluffy] wool.)

It means: their parts will not be firmly connected to each other, so that they will be like the fluffy wool.

Similar, to this Quranic revelation, is another one in the Quran, 101: 4-5

﴿يَوْمَ يَكُونُ ٱلنَّاسُ كَٱلْفَرَاشِ ٱلْمَبْثُوثِ ﴿٤﴾
وَتَكُونُ ٱلْجِبَالُ كَٱلْعِهْنِ ٱلْمَنفُوشِ ﴿٥﴾﴾

The explanation:

(4- The day when people shall be like scattered moths.
5- And mountains shall be like the fluffy wool.)

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 77: 10

﴿وَإِذَا ٱلْجِبَالُ نُسِفَتْ ﴿١٠﴾﴾

The explanation: (And when mountains are scattered [to the winds] as dust.)

It means: The wind will carry away their dust, and scatter it towards low lands; because their parts will become loosely connected to each other; that is because the Earth will then have lost its gravitational power.

[**Comment by the translator:** Such incidents and observations of the earth in the Last Day, like: the everlasting day and night, the dryness of rivers and seas, the disappearance of the sweet palatable water, the crushing and grinding of mountains and the filling of the sky by smoke due to the mixing of the gaseous layers, ...etc. Such incidents may now be seen, observed and studied in Mercury and Venus; because these have stopped the axial rotation, and are now in their Last Day. See: "The Traveling to Venus Is Dangerous", in the preceding pages above.]

The Sky Will Be Cleft

["**Lift up your eyes to heaven, and look down to the earth beneath: for the 'heaven' shall vanish like smoke, and the inhabitants thereof shall perish in like manner.**" - the Book of Prophet Isaiah, chapter 51]

We said, in the past pages, that the word 'sky' or 'heaven', in singular, mentioned in the Quran, means the gaseous layers. These layers, too, are going to be ruined, that is because the Earth will break up on Doomsday, and while the gaseous layers are attracted to the Earth, they – together with the Earth – will be destroyed and dispersed, or in other words, the gaseous layers will mix with each other, becoming as smoke; as it was at the beginning of its formation.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 21: 104

﴿يَوْمَ نَطْوِى ٱلسَّمَآءَ كَطَىِّ ٱلسِّجِلِّ لِلْكُتُبِ ۚ
كَمَا بَدَأْنَآ أَوَّلَ خَلْقٍ نُّعِيدُهُۥ ۚ وَعْدًا عَلَيْنَآ ۚ إِنَّا كُنَّا فَٰعِلِينَ ﴿١٠٤﴾﴾

The explanation: (The day when we shall roll up the heaven as the "sijill" [or the leather bucket used as a folder] rolls up the books [and mix them with each other.] As We began [its] first

This condition will issue before Doomsday and after the standstill of the Earth from its axial rotation. While on Doomsday, the Earth will break up into meteorites.

God - be celebrated His praise - said in the Quran, 73: 14

﴿يَوْمَ تَرْجُفُ ٱلْأَرْضُ وَٱلْجِبَالُ وَكَانَتِ ٱلْجِبَالُ كَثِيبًا مَّهِيلًا ﴿١٤﴾﴾

The explanation: (And on the day when the earth and the mountains shall quake, and priorily the mountains shall become a heaping mass of sand.)

It means: like sand-hills in which the sand easily sweeps away of their sides with the least movement, and the wind carries it away to the low lands.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 70: 8-9

﴿يَوْمَ تَكُونُ ٱلسَّمَآءُ كَٱلْمُهْلِ ﴿٨﴾ وَتَكُونُ ٱلْجِبَالُ كَٱلْعِهْنِ ﴿٩﴾﴾

The explanation: (The day when the sky shall be as the turbid [boiled] oil [of sesame], and the mountains shall be like [fluffy] wool.)

It means: their parts will not be firmly connected to each other, so that they will be like the fluffy wool.

Similar, to this Quranic revelation, is another one in the Quran, 101: 4-5

﴿يَوْمَ يَكُونُ ٱلنَّاسُ كَٱلْفَرَاشِ ٱلْمَبْثُوثِ ﴿٤﴾
وَتَكُونُ ٱلْجِبَالُ كَٱلْعِهْنِ ٱلْمَنفُوشِ ﴿٥﴾﴾

The explanation:

(4- The day when people shall be like scattered moths.
5- And mountains shall be like the fluffy wool.)

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 77: 10

﴿وَإِذَا ٱلْجِبَالُ نُسِفَتْ ﴿١٠﴾﴾

The explanation: (And when mountains are scattered [to the winds] as dust.)

It means: The wind will carry away their dust, and scatter it towards low lands; because their parts will become loosely connected to each other; that is because the Earth will then have lost its gravitational power.

[**Comment by the translator:** Such incidents and observations of the earth in the Last Day, like: the everlasting day and night, the dryness of rivers and seas, the disappearance of the sweet palatable water, the crushing and grinding of mountains and the filling of the sky by smoke due to the mixing of the gaseous layers, ...etc. Such incidents may now be seen, observed and studied in Mercury and Venus; because these have stopped the axial rotation, and are now in their Last Day. See: "The Traveling to Venus Is Dangerous", in the preceding pages above.]

The Sky Will Be Cleft

["**Lift up your eyes to heaven, and look down to the earth beneath: for the 'heaven' shall vanish like smoke, and the inhabitants thereof shall perish in like manner.**" - the Book of Prophet Isaiah, chapter 51]

We said, in the past pages, that the word 'sky' or 'heaven', in singular, mentioned in the Quran, means the gaseous layers. These layers, too, are going to be ruined, that is because the Earth will break up on Doomsday, and while the gaseous layers are attracted to the Earth, they – together with the Earth – will be destroyed and dispersed, or in other words, the gaseous layers will mix with each other, becoming as smoke; as it was at the beginning of its formation.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 21: 104

﴿يَوْمَ نَطْوِى ٱلسَّمَآءَ كَطَىِّ ٱلسِّجِلِّ لِلْكُتُبِ ۚ
كَمَا بَدَأْنَآ أَوَّلَ خَلْقٍ نُّعِيدُهُۥ ۚ وَعْدًا عَلَيْنَآ ۚ إِنَّا كُنَّا فَٰعِلِينَ ﴿١٠٤﴾﴾

The explanation: (The day when we shall roll up the heaven as the "sijill" [or the leather bucket used as a folder] rolls up the books [and mix them with each other.] As We began [its] first

creation will We bring it back again – a promise [binding] upon Us; surely We are going to perform it [as did We before.])

The word 'heaven' means the gaseous layers; the 'sijill' is a big bucket made of leather; (originally it was used for taking water from the well, but after being perforated it was used for keeping their books. And because there was no paper at that time, their books were made of leather, gazelle skin i.e. parchment, broad bones, pieces of wood …etc.)

[Any piece of writing, including letters, is called writing or a scripture or a book.]

[This also is the meaning of the word in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

The 'rolling up' means the decrease of power, and the regression in various aspects, and the disintegration of masses. [This also is the meaning of the word in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

The 'books' is the plural of 'book'. The 'book' is the paper or anything containing the written words. [The Arabic word, lit., is similar to the word 'writing'.] Books of the ancient Arabs were written on bones of animals like the shoulder blade …etc., or on palm leaves or on limestone, or pebbles, or on the cattle leather, or the parchment, which is the skin of the gazelle.

As such were their books; because at that time, there were no papers for writing. The 'sijill' to them is like the folder or briefcase to us, in which they kept their books. They used to put their books in the 'sijill' (or the leather bucket), but without order, so that they were mixed: the leather over the palm leaves; the palm leaves over the bones, and the bones over the leather. And as such were their books mixed with each other.

The interpretation of this Quranic revelation: The day when we will destroy the gaseous layers and mix them with each other, exactly as does your folder or briefcase (i.e. the 'sijill')

mix the books (or writings) over each other and with each other. The indication of this lies in His saying -be exalted –

﴿كَمَا بَدَأْنَآ أَوَّلَ خَلْقٍ نُّعِيدُهُۥ ۚ وَعْدًا عَلَيْنَآ ۚ إِنَّا كُنَّا فَٰعِلِينَ ﴿١٠٤﴾﴾

The explanation: (As We began [its] first creation will We bring it back again – a promise [binding] upon Us; surely We are going to perform it [as did We before.])

It means: As had we started the formation of the gaseous layers from smoke, as such shall we return them into smoke on Doomsday. This is a promise from God Almighty, and He - be exalted – mentioned that in the past tense [as the Quranic revelation indicates] to suggest that He had carried out a similar thing, to those who were before them, when their Doomsday took place, and we tore up and destroyed those gaseous heavens which were above them. And as such will we do when Doomsday of your Earth will take place.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 25: 25

﴿وَيَوْمَ تَشَقَّقُ ٱلسَّمَآءُ بِٱلْغَمَٰمِ وَنُزِّلَ ٱلْمَلَٰٓئِكَةُ تَنزِيلًا ﴿٢٥﴾﴾

The explanation: (On the Day [of Doom] when the sky [: the gaseous layers] shall be torn up [turning] into black thick clouds, and the angels shall be sent down [from the ethereal heavens to the 'gathering-together' by their Lord's leave.])

God -be exalted – said also in the Quran, 69: 16

﴿وَٱنشَقَّتِ ٱلسَّمَآءُ فَهِىَ يَوْمَئِذٍ وَاهِيَةٌ ﴿١٦﴾﴾

The explanation: (And [the gaseous layers of] the sky will split asunder; for on that day it will be shabby.)

Therefore, (it will be shabby) indicates that it will be torn. [This also is the meaning of the word in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 55: 37

﴿فَإِذَا ٱنشَقَّتِ ٱلسَّمَآءُ فَكَانَتْ وَرْدَةً كَٱلدِّهَانِ ﴿٣٧﴾﴾

The explanation: (And when the sky splits asunder [before Doomsday], and becomes a resort [for souls] like the pools [of rain water.])

The 'sky', here, means the gaseous layers. The وَرْدَةً is an indication of coming of the souls to the 'gathering-together' in heaven.

The دِهَانِ is the plural of دهن which is a pit present between the mountains in which rain water collects.

It means: The souls will gather in the heaven for Judgment, just as how does rain water collect in those pits between mountains.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 70: 8

﴿يَوْمَ تَكُونُ ٱلسَّمَآءُ كَٱلْمُهْلِ ۝٨﴾

The explanation: (The day when the sky shall be as the turbid [boiled] oil [of sesame.])

The interpretation: The sky on that day will be like the turbid sesame oil; because those gases will mix and become like smoke.

God –be highly exalted - said in the Quran, 73: 17-18

﴿فَكَيْفَ تَتَّقُونَ إِن كَفَرْتُمْ يَوْمًا يَجْعَلُ ٱلْوِلْدَٰنَ شِيبًا ۝١٧
ٱلسَّمَآءُ مُنفَطِرٌۢ بِهِۦ ۚ كَانَ وَعْدُهُۥ مَفْعُولًا ۝١٨﴾

The explanation:

(17- Then if you disbelieve [in the Quran], how can you avoid [the torment of] a day that shall make children grey-headed?

18- whereon the sky shall cleave; His promise [shall] be fulfilled.)

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 77: 9

﴿وَإِذَا ٱلسَّمَآءُ فُرِجَتْ ۝٩﴾

The explanation: (And when the sky is riven apart.) means: parted, i.e. split and opened.

[This also is the meaning of the word in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 78: 19

﴿وَفُتِحَتِ ٱلسَّمَآءُ فَكَانَتْ أَبْوَٰبًا ۝١٩﴾

The explanation: (And the heaven [shall] be parted open and have [many] gates.)

[The rift in the ozone layer may be the beginning of this riving or parting or splitting of the sky or the gaseous heaven – the translator]

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 86: 11

﴿وَٱلسَّمَآءِ ذَاتِ ٱلرَّجْعِ ۝١١﴾

The explanation: (11- By the sky [: the gaseous heavens] that shall return back [to its initial state of smoke.])

It means: It will return again to be smoke, just as how it was at the start of its formation.

In addition to that, it is mentioned in the Old Testament, the Book of Prophet Isaiah, chapter 51; he said:

"Lift up your eyes to heaven, and look down to the earth beneath: for the 'heaven' shall vanish like smoke, and the inhabitants thereof shall perish in like manner."

The 'heavens', here, and means the gaseous layers.

The Gaseous Layers [on Doomsday]

In the Quran, the 'heavens' in plural are mentioned at many occasions: like His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 39: 67

﴿وَمَا قَدَرُوا۟ ٱللَّهَ حَقَّ قَدْرِهِۦ وَٱلْأَرْضُ جَمِيعًا قَبْضَتُهُۥ يَوْمَ ٱلْقِيَٰمَةِ وَٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتُ مَطْوِيَّٰتٌۢ بِيَمِينِهِۦ ۚ سُبْحَٰنَهُۥ وَتَعَٰلَىٰ عَمَّا يُشْرِكُونَ ﴿٦٧﴾﴾

The explanation: (And they do not esteem God as He should be esteemed, while the earth, all, will be [but] His handful on the Doomsday, and the heavens will be rolled up by His right hand. Celebrated be His praise and exalted be He above what they associate [with Him as partners.])

Therefore, (the heavens will be rolled up by His right hand) is similar to (The day when We shall roll up the heaven as the "sijill" [or the leather bucket used as a folder] rolls up the books [and mix them with each other]), except that in the first revelation 'the heavens' is mentioned in plural, while in the second it is mentioned in singular, but in both Quranic revelations God - be exalted – means the gaseous heavens and their splitting and destruction on Doomsday.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 19: 90-91

﴿تَكَادُ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتُ يَتَفَطَّرْنَ مِنْهُ وَتَنشَقُّ ٱلْأَرْضُ وَتَخِرُّ ٱلْجِبَالُ هَدًّا ﴿٩٠﴾ أَن دَعَوْا۟ لِلرَّحْمَٰنِ وَلَدًا ﴿٩١﴾﴾

The explanation: (Because of it, the heavens are about to crack, the earth splits asunder and the mountains fall crushed; that they attributed to the Most Gracious a son!)

The 'heavens', here, and means the gaseous layers.

The interpretation: The gaseous heavens are about to cleave or split; because of their serious saying when they ascribed a son to the Most Gracious, and the earth is about to cleave, while the mountains are about to fall down crushed and dispersed.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 42: 5

﴿تَكَادُ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتُ يَتَفَطَّرْنَ مِن فَوْقِهِنَّ ۚ وَٱلْمَلَٰٓئِكَةُ يُسَبِّحُونَ بِحَمْدِ رَبِّهِمْ وَيَسْتَغْفِرُونَ لِمَن فِى ٱلْأَرْضِ ۗ أَلَآ إِنَّ ٱللَّهَ هُوَ ٱلْغَفُورُ ٱلرَّحِيمُ ﴿٥﴾﴾

The explanation: (The [gaseous] heavens from above[1] the [planets] are about to crack up [because of their attributing sons and daughters to God]; the angels celebrate the praises of their Lord and ask forgiveness [of God] to those [believers, monotheists] who are on the earth; surely, God: He is the Most-Forgiving, the Most Merciful [to believers.])

So these Quranic revelations tell clearly that the gaseous layers will split and disperse on the Day of Doom; because the Earth will break up and the gases – being attracted to it by gravitation – will be destroyed altogether with the Earth.

[Comment by the translator: The rift in the ozone layer may be an initial sign of the cleaving, splitting and tearing of the gaseous layers; which is a sign of the approach of the Last Day then Doomsday.]

What Is Doomsday?

["**And immediately after the tribulation of those days, the sun shall be darkened and the moon shall not give her light and the stars shall fall down from heaven and the powers of heaven shall be moved.**" - the Holy Gospel according to St. Matthew, chapter 24]

The Doomsday is the day in which the Sun will tear up to [form the new] planets, while the present planets – together with the Earth – will break up to [form the] meteorites, and the mountains will be smashed into scattered dust. It is the day in

(1) i.e. from above the terrestrial planets; because each planet has its own gaseous heavens; and that cleavage is because of their serious claim that God has a son! (or daughters!) Those were the old pagan Arabs in the pre-Islam era who claimed that the angels were God's daughters, and Christians who claim that the Christ is the son of God!

which all the mortal creatures will die, so that none will survive on the surface of the Earth and the other planets.

It is the day in which the solar system, as a whole, will be broken up into pieces, then the souls will leave the Earth and scatter in the space, while nothing will remain on the destroyed Earth except dead corpses. On that day, the 'gathering-together' or the 'congregation', the Judgment, the recompense and the admission into Paradise or hell for all people.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 69: 13-15

﴿فَإِذَا نُفِخَ فِي ٱلصُّورِ نَفْخَةٌ وَٰحِدَةٌ ﴿١٣﴾ وَحُمِلَتِ ٱلْأَرْضُ وَٱلْجِبَالُ فَدُكَّتَا دَكَّةً وَٰحِدَةً ﴿١٤﴾ فَيَوْمَئِذٍ وَقَعَتِ ٱلْوَاقِعَةُ ﴿١٥﴾﴾

The explanation:

(13- So, when the 'Horn' is blown with a single blast.
14- And the earth [together] with the mountains are borne, and crushed with a single crash.
15- On that day will the inevitable [event of Doomsday] occur.)

It means: On that day, the Doomsday will take place; and on that day, it will be blown through the Horn with one blast; and on that day, the Earth and the mountains will be crushed and destroyed.

God -be glorified - said in the Quran, 50: 44

﴿يَوْمَ تَشَقَّقُ ٱلْأَرْضُ عَنْهُمْ سِرَاعًا ۚ ذَٰلِكَ حَشْرٌ عَلَيْنَا يَسِيرٌ ﴿٤٤﴾﴾

The explanation: (On the day when the earth will split up [and part] off them, hastening forth [they will come] – that will be a gathering together, which will be quite easy to Us [to make.])

It means: It will split up and part off the souls; because the souls will be inside the Earth, i.e. inside the graves.

[Note: For more details, the dear reader ought to refer to the book entitled "**Man after Death**" by the same author the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan.]

[This also is the meaning of the word in the Arabs poetry, some of which is mentioned by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible, in his Arabic book.]

So, when it will break up, they will leave it and scatter in the space, then the 'gathering-together' or the 'congregation' will take place. This is indicated by His saying -be exalted - ذَٰلِكَ حَشْرٌ عَلَيْنَا يَسِيرٌ i.e. (that will be a gathering together, which will be quite easy to Us [to make.])

This is also proved by His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 4: 42

﴿يَوْمَئِذٍ يَوَدُّ ٱلَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا۟ وَعَصَوُا۟ ٱلرَّسُولَ لَوْ تُسَوَّىٰ بِهِمُ ٱلْأَرْضُ وَلَا يَكْتُمُونَ ٱللَّهَ حَدِيثًا ﴿٤٢﴾﴾

The explanation: (On that day, those who disbelieved and disobeyed the Apostle [: the Messenger] would fain that the earth were rearranged and leveled with them, but they can hide no fact from God.)

The interpretation:

- (that the earth were rearranged and leveled with them) means: They wish that the earth will return as it was [before its splitting and breaking up], so that it will compact and reunite after its splitting, so they may disappear inside it, just as how were they hiding in their graves; and they wish there will neither be any gathering-together nor any judgment. But when the Earth will split and they will become without refuge, and will see the gathering-together and the Judgment; at that time they will wish such a wishing.

The word تُسَوَّىٰ i.e. (were rearranged and leveled) means: Its parts stick to each other and reunite after it's breaking up.

This is like His saying -be exalted - in the Quran, 75: 4

﴿بَلَىٰ قَٰدِرِينَ عَلَىٰٓ أَن نُّسَوِّيَ بَنَانَهُۥ ﴿٤﴾﴾

The explanation: (Yes, indeed, We are Able even to restore [the prints of] his finger tips.)

It means: We are Able to restore the body of man as it was; so that We recreate the finger tips as they were before its death.[Here is another scientific miracle of the Quran; because the individual variation in finger prints was unknown at the time of the revelation of the Quran about 1400 years ago – the translator.]

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 81: 1-3

﴿إِذَا ٱلشَّمۡسُ كُوِّرَتۡ ۝١ وَإِذَا ٱلنُّجُومُ ٱنكَدَرَتۡ ۝٢ وَإِذَا ٱلۡجِبَالُ سُيِّرَتۡ ۝٣﴾

The explanation:

(1- When the sun shall be 'divided into many spheres.'
2- And when the stars shall be dim [to the sight.]
3- And when the [space-] mountains [:the meteorites] shall be moved [towards the sun.])

The interpretation: When that which We have mentioned: the breaking of the sun into many spheres, the falling down of the comets, or the disappearance of the planets from sight because of the thick smoke and fog in the atmosphere, and the moving of the mountains; at that time, Doomsday will take place.

These Quranic revelations have been interpreted in the past pages.

God -be glorified - said in the Quran, 82: 1-4

﴿إِذَا ٱلسَّمَآءُ ٱنفَطَرَتۡ ۝١ وَإِذَا ٱلۡكَوَاكِبُ ٱنتَثَرَتۡ ۝٢
وَإِذَا ٱلۡبِحَارُ فُجِّرَتۡ ۝٣ وَإِذَا ٱلۡقُبُورُ بُعۡثِرَتۡ ۝٤﴾

The explanation:

([These shall be some of the signs of Doomsday:]
1- When the sky shall split open.
2- And when the [terrestrial] planets [shall break up into pieces that] shall be strewn about [in the space to be meteorites.]
3- And when the seas shall gush forth [with the underground water.]
4- And when tombs shall be [destroyed and] dispersed.)

The interpretation: When these events will take place, then that day will be the Day of Doom.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 84: 1-5

﴿إِذَا ٱلسَّمَآءُ ٱنشَقَّتۡ ۝١ وَأَذِنَتۡ لِرَبِّهَا وَحُقَّتۡ ۝٢
وَإِذَا ٱلۡأَرۡضُ مُدَّتۡ ۝٣ وَأَلۡقَتۡ مَا فِيهَا وَتَخَلَّتۡ ۝٤ وَأَذِنَتۡ لِرَبِّهَا وَحُقَّتۡ ۝٥﴾

The explanation:

([When Doomsday will come, these events will occur:]
1- When the sky [: the gaseous layers] shall tear apart.
2- And listen to [the command of] its Lord, and be entitled [to do so.]
3- And when the earth shall be [torn up into pieces that shall be] widely scattered.
4- And cast out all the [evil souls] inside it, and be empty [of them.]
5- And listen to [the command of] its Lord, and be entitled [to do so.]

The interpretation: When these events will take place, then that day will be the Doomsday, and on that day the Judgment and the Recompense will be.

-- (And cast out all the [evil souls] inside it, and be empty [of them.]) means: It will throw, what souls inside it, to the space, and will be devoid of them.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 99: 1-5

﴿إِذَا زُلۡزِلَتِ ٱلۡأَرۡضُ زِلۡزَالَهَا ۝١ وَأَخۡرَجَتِ ٱلۡأَرۡضُ أَثۡقَالَهَا ۝٢
وَقَالَ ٱلۡإِنسَٰنُ مَا لَهَا ۝٣ يَوۡمَئِذٖ تُحَدِّثُ أَخۡبَارَهَا ۝٤ بِأَنَّ رَبَّكَ أَوۡحَىٰ لَهَا ۝٥﴾

The explanation:([The Doomsday will be there, when these events will occur:]
1- When Earth shall be violently quaked!
2- And Earth shall expel its heavy [insufferable, wicked persons!]
3- And man shall say [men: to each other], 'What is the matter with it!?'

4- On that day, [people] will tell [each other] the news:
5- That your Lord has revealed to it [to quake this quaking of the Doomsday!])

The interpretation: When these events take place, then that day will be the Doomsday.

-- (And Earth shall expel its heavy [insufferable, wicked persons!]) The heavy persons are the wicked souls; it means: It will drive the souls, which were heavy upon the earth, out of it. This is similar to His saying -be exalted - وَأَلْقَتْ مَا فِيهَا وَتَخَلَّتْ i.e. (And cast out all the [evil souls] inside it, and be empty [of them.])

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 77: 8-10

﴿فَإِذَا ٱلنُّجُومُ طُمِسَتْ ۝٨ وَإِذَا ٱلسَّمَآءُ فُرِجَتْ ۝٩ وَإِذَا ٱلْجِبَالُ نُسِفَتْ ۝١٠﴾

The explanation:
(8- So when the [tailed-] stars [: the comets] are immersed [in the earth.]
9-And when the sky is riven apart.
10- And when mountains are scattered [to the winds] as dust.)

The interpretation: When these events take place, then Doomsday will take place, and the Judgment and Recompense will be. The indication of this lies in the preceding revelation (the Quran, 77: 7), that is His saying -be exalted –

﴿إِنَّمَا تُوعَدُونَ لَوَٰقِعٌ ۝٧﴾

The explanation: (Then surely that [punishment], with which you are promised, will inevitably occur [if you believe not.]) It means: What you are promised with, concerning the Judgment and Recompense, is going to take place. Then God - be exalted – explained when this will be, and He said:

﴿فَإِذَا ٱلنُّجُومُ طُمِسَتْ ۝٨ وَإِذَا ٱلسَّمَآءُ فُرِجَتْ ۝٩ وَإِذَا ٱلْجِبَالُ نُسِفَتْ ۝١٠﴾

The explanation:
(8- So when the [tailed-] stars [: the comets] are immersed [in the earth.]

9- And when the sky is riven apart.
10- And when mountains are scattered [to the winds] as dust.)

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 75: 5-13

﴿بَلْ يُرِيدُ ٱلْإِنسَٰنُ لِيَفْجُرَ أَمَامَهُۥ ۝٥ يَسْـَٔلُ أَيَّانَ يَوْمُ ٱلْقِيَٰمَةِ ۝٦ فَإِذَا بَرِقَ ٱلْبَصَرُ ۝٧ وَخَسَفَ ٱلْقَمَرُ ۝٨ وَجُمِعَ ٱلشَّمْسُ وَٱلْقَمَرُ ۝٩ يَقُولُ ٱلْإِنسَٰنُ يَوْمَئِذٍ أَيْنَ ٱلْمَفَرُّ ۝١٠ كَلَّا لَا وَزَرَ ۝١١ إِلَىٰ رَبِّكَ يَوْمَئِذٍ ٱلْمُسْتَقَرُّ ۝١٢ يُنَبَّؤُا۟ ٱلْإِنسَٰنُ يَوْمَئِذٍ بِمَا قَدَّمَ وَأَخَّرَ ۝١٣﴾

The explanation:
(5- But man aims [from his denial of the sending forth to the Hereafter] to go on as a profligate.
6- He questions [with his denial]: 'When is the Doomsday!?'
7- But when the sight is dazed.
8- And the moon is cleft.
9- And the sun and the moon are joined together.
10-On that day [the unbelieving man] shall say: 'Wither to flee?'
11- No, he will not be hidden [in any shelter!]
12-On that day, the [only] repose will be in the neighborhood of your Lord.
13- On that day, the [unbelieving] man shall be informed of what [prohibitions] he had put forward [so he had committed the prohibitions], and [of what religious duties he had] put back [so he had forsaken them.])

The interpretation: When these signs are there, then the Doomsday will be; because Quraish, the tribe of Prophet Mohammed - Peace be on him – asked about Doomsday: when it will be; so God - be exalted and glorified – answered them with these Quranic revelations.

Formation of the New Planets

["**For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth; and the former things shall not be in remembrance, and they shall not come upon the heart."** - the prophecy of Isaiah, chapter 56: 17]

We said, in the past pages that our present Sun will break up, on Doomsday, into nineteen pieces. These pieces will be attracted by gravitation towards the sun nearest to them; because each of these pieces will have a cold crust, and will have both:

Axial rotation – resulting in the day and night,

And revolution around the sun – resulting in formation of the four seasons of the year (: spring, autumn, summer and winter.)

Obviously, these pieces will not be equal in volume, but some of them will be small while some others will be big. In addition, they will not be spherical in shape at the start, but they will have some projections and edges. Therefore, when these objects will start to rotate around themselves because of their central heat, then the edges and peripheral projections will detach from them forming their moons. By that, the original pieces will become spherical; because the projections will have been detached from them. Then they will increase in coldness and firmness until they will become inhabited planets.

This will occur for many reasons:

First: Their surfaces will become completely cold, in the course of time.

Second: They will pull towards them our present planets; for they will have been broken up, on the Doomsday, into meteorites; some of which will fall on those new planets.

Third: They will pull towards them the scattered particles in the space, which –previously - were meteorites that have been smashed when their Doomsday occurred.

Fourth: They will pull towards them the gases scattered in the space.

By means of all these factors, their volumes will increase, and they will become the new planets revolving around a new sun, and they will have some new moons. In other words, **there will be a new solar system**, and God will create on them plants, animals, people and so on.

And as such are the solar systems formed: Any solar system that is destroyed, another one will issue instead of the previous one.

God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 35: 15-17

﴿يَٰٓأَيُّهَا ٱلنَّاسُ أَنتُمُ ٱلْفُقَرَآءُ إِلَى ٱللَّهِ ۖ وَٱللَّهُ هُوَ ٱلْغَنِىُّ ٱلْحَمِيدُ ﴿١٥﴾

إِن يَشَأْ يُذْهِبْكُمْ وَيَأْتِ بِخَلْقٍ جَدِيدٍ ﴿١٦﴾ وَمَا ذَٰلِكَ عَلَى ٱللَّهِ بِعَزِيزٍ ﴿١٧﴾﴾

The explanation:

(15- O mankind, you are in need of God; but God, He is the Independent of [any], the Praiseworthy.

16- If He please, He will make you perish and will bring [instead of you] a new creation.

17- For that is no hard [matter] for God.)

God -be exalted – said also in the Quran, 14: 19-20

﴿أَلَمْ تَرَ أَنَّ ٱللَّهَ خَلَقَ ٱلسَّمَٰوَٰتِ وَٱلْأَرْضَ بِٱلْحَقِّ ۚ

إِن يَشَأْ يُذْهِبْكُمْ وَيَأْتِ بِخَلْقٍ جَدِيدٍ ﴿١٩﴾ وَمَا ذَٰلِكَ عَلَى ٱللَّهِ بِعَزِيزٍ ﴿٢٠﴾﴾

The explanation:

(19- Don't you [O associater] see that God has created the heavens and the earth with the true [promise(1)]? If He please, He will make you perish and will bring [instead of you] a new creation.

20- Nor is that so hard a matter for God.)

In addition, God -be exalted - said in the Quran, 4: 133

﴿إِن يَشَأْ يُذْهِبْكُمْ أَيُّهَا ٱلنَّاسُ وَيَأْتِ بِـَٔاخَرِينَ ۚ

وَكَانَ ٱللَّهُ عَلَىٰ ذَٰلِكَ قَدِيرًا ﴿١٣٣﴾﴾

(1) To destroy and disperse them.

The explanation: (If He will, He can make you perish [in case you do not help your prophet], O men, and bring others [in stead of you, who will not be like you]; -- God is All-Able to do that.)

Moreover, God – be highly exalted - said in the Quran, 76: 28

﴿نَّحْنُ خَلَقْنَٰهُمْ وَشَدَدْنَآ أَسْرَهُمْ ۖ وَإِذَا شِئْنَا بَدَّلْنَآ أَمْثَٰلَهُمْ تَبْدِيلًا ﴿٢٨﴾﴾

The explanation: (It is We Who have created them and made their feet strong [and their gait steady]; but when We will [to destroy them and] substitute them by [creating] others like them.)

It is mentioned in the Old Testament, in the Prophecy of Isaiah, chapter 56: 17

"For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth; and the former things shall not be in remembrance, and they shall not come upon the heart."

A Remark about the Recent Heat Wave That Has Overwhelmed the World

Recently, a very severe heat wave has overwhelmed the whole world, in which the temperature and humidity have arisen in an extraordinary way, which we do not remember any heat wave similar to it.

One who studies the temperature in summer, specially in Iraq [our country], will find that it did not rise to such an extent that it exceeded half the boiling temperature by more than one degree which became very embarrassing to people and harmful to their health.

I think that this is ascribed to that the Earth has approached the Sun by few miles, according to what we explained under the title of (The Earth Approaches the Sun) in this book [See the preceding pages above], in which we said that the heat of the Earth core should have decreased to less than its previous severity because of the emergence of fire and lava from the volcanoes, and because of the utilization of the petroleum and the natural gas in huge amounts.

And due to the fact that the gravitational force affects the cold object more; therefore, the gravitational force of the Sun should have influenced the Earth more than previously, so that the Earth has approached the Sun in this year 1978AD, so that the heat increased on the surface of the Earth.

If the heat in the following summer seasons will reach to such an extent, like that during this year, then that will confirm our hypothesis of the Earth approaching and getting nearer to the Sun, and if not then our hypothesis will not be correct.

==========

[In the years following 1978, the heat continued to be high in Iraq and some other countries, so that the winter was warmer and summer was hotter than before, as was anticipated by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible. –The translator.]

God's help has completed this first part of our book. Its title is **The Universe and the Quran.** The second part, entitled **Man after Death,** will follow, by God' will.

The End

==========

References

1- The Glorious Quran: the Arabic Word of God.

2- The Holy Bible.

3- The Interpretation of the Revelation – by Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the late interpreter of the Quran and the Bible.

4- Translation by: E.H. Palmer: The Koran (Quran).

5- The meaning of the Glorious Koran, by Mohammed Marmaduke Pickthal.

6- The Glorious Kur'an – Translation and Commentary, by Abd-Allah Yousuf Ali.

7- The Holly Qur-an, English translation of the meaning and Commentary, by a Saudi committee.

8- The Koran interpreted, by Alberry.

9- A Dictionary of Modern Written Arabic – Hans Wehr (Edited by J. Milton Cown.)

10- Oxford Advanced Learner's Dictionary of Current English (A.S.Hornby.)

[In the years following 1978, the heat continued to be high in Iraq and some other countries, so that the winter was warmer and summer was hotter than before, as was anticipated by the late Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the interpreter of the Quran and the Bible. –The translator.]

God's help has completed this first part of our book. Its title is **The Universe and the Quran.** The second part, entitled **Man after Death,** will follow, by God' will.

The End

References

1- The Glorious Quran: the Arabic Word of God.

2- The Holy Bible.

3- The Interpretation of the Revelation – by Mohammed-Ali Hassan, the late interpreter of the Quran and the Bible.

4- Translation by: E.H. Palmer: The Koran (Quran).

5- The meaning of the Glorious Koran, by Mohammed Marmaduke Pickthal.

6- The Glorious Kur'an – Translation and Commentary, by Abd-Allah Yousuf Ali.

7- The Holly Qur-an, English translation of the meaning and Commentary, by a Saudi committee.

8- The Koran interpreted, by Alberry.

9- A Dictionary of Modern Written Arabic – Hans Wehr (Edited by J. Milton Cown.)

10- Oxford Advanced Learner's Dictionary of Current English (A.S.Hornby.)

Contents

Preface to the first and second editions 4

Introduction 5

First Part: The Formation of Objects 7

The sky (or heaven) 7

The heavens 9

1- the gaseous heavens 9

The natural gas 10

2- The ethereal heavens 16

The ether 17

The Throne 23

3- the material heavens 26

Comment 30

Definition 31

Conversation with the author 32

The Planets (The Wandering Stars) 35

- The day and year of the planet 35
- The planets have satellites and moons 35
- The atmosphere of the planets 36
- The light of the planets and their temperature 36
- The distance of the planets from the sun, by millions of miles 37
- The planets are inhabited 40

[The mistake of Astronomers about Pluto] 40

[The mistake of Astronomers about the Asteroids] 41

- Formation of the planets 42
- Formation of the earth 45

The gravitation 55

- Cause of the gravitation 59
- Proving that the gravitation is because of the heat. 60

The repelling force 62

- A diagram of the roundabout 63

The movement of objects 64

The reason for the revolution of the planets around the sun 65

- The reason for the variation in the duration of the planets' revolution around the sun 66
- The cause of a planet being near the sun and another being far 66
- A diagram illustrating that the repelling force repels the big object more than the small 67
- The reason for the rotation of the earth around itself 68

Moons and their formation 69

- The appearances of the moon 72
- A diagram of the moon in the third night of the month 73
- phases of the moon 74
- A diagram showing the phases of the moon 74

Traveling to the moon 75

Traveling to Venus is dangerous 79

Traveling to Mars is successful 80

The emigration to Mars 80

Comment 81

Contents

Preface to the first and second editions 4
Introduction 5
First Part: The Formation of Objects 7
The sky (or heaven) 7
The heavens 9
1- the gaseous heavens 9
The natural gas 10
2- The ethereal heavens 16
The ether 17
The Throne 23
3- the material heavens 26
Comment 30
Definition 31
Conversation with the author 32
The Planets (The Wandering Stars) 35
- The day and year of the planet 35
- The planets have satellites and moons 35
- The atmosphere of the planets 36
- The light of the planets and their temperature 36
- The distance of the planets from the sun, by millions of miles 37
- The planets are inhabited 40
[The mistake of Astronomers about Pluto] 40
[The mistake of Astronomers about the Asteroids] 41

- Formation of the planets 42
- Formation of the earth 45
The gravitation 55
- Cause of the gravitation 59
- Proving that the gravitation is because of the heat. 60
The repelling force 62
- A diagram of the roundabout 63
The movement of objects 64
The reason for the revolution of the planets around the sun 65
- The reason for the variation in the duration of the planets' revolution around the sun 66
- The cause of a planet being near the sun and another being far 66
- A diagram illustrating that the repelling force repels the big object more than the small 67
- The reason for the rotation of the earth around itself 68
Moons and their formation 69
- The appearances of the moon 72
- A diagram of the moon in the third night of the month 73
- phases of the moon 74
- A diagram showing the phases of the moon 74
Traveling to the moon 75
Traveling to Venus is dangerous 79
Traveling to Mars is successful 80
The emigration to Mars 80
Comment 81

An anticipated meeting between the inhabitants of Earth and the inhabitants of some other planets 81
The asteroids 83
The eclipses 84
The meteorites 85
Merckson meteorite 90
Mountains 91
Life is transmittable (or migrant) 95
The meteors 106
The earthquake and cleavage 109
Volcanoes 115
Sun 121
Comets 132
Stars 143
- [The pairedness (or coupling) of stars :] 143
-Age of stars 144
A rule for objects 144
[The Wrong Calculations of Astronomers Concerning Mars]: 146
[The Wrong Calculations of Astronomers Concerning Jupiter]: 146
The day and night 147
- [A miracle of the Quran: the authentic word of God :] 147
The rain 152
The snow 155
The hailstone 155

- The Lightning of the Cloud 157
The tide 158
Springs 160
Second Part: The Destruction and Dispersion of Objects 161
Destruction of objects and their dispersion 161
The standstill of the earth 163
How the terrestrial planets will stand still 167
-[An Explanation by the translator] 168
Sunspots 171
[The mistake of Astronomers concerning sunspots :] 171
The world that is burning 174
The earth approaches the sun 176
- [A scientific miracle of the Quran:] 177
The plant will burn and rivers will dry up 180
The Fixation of moon 184
The Fission of Moon into two halves 185
The meteorites will move towards the sun 188
The sky will be Distributed 189
Repentance will not be accepted on that day 190
Falling of the comets down upon the earth 193
[The Oath or Swearing in the Quran:] 197
The sun will burst 201
The sky will be filled with fire and smoke 205
The blowing through the Horn 207
The earthquake [of Doomsday] 212

An anticipated meeting between the inhabitants of Earth and the inhabitants of some other planets 81
The asteroids 83
The eclipses 84
The meteorites 85
Merckson meteorite 90
Mountains 91
Life is transmittable (or migrant) 95
The meteors 106
The earthquake and cleavage 109
Volcanoes 115
Sun 121
Comets 132
Stars 143
- [The pairedness (or coupling) of stars :] 143
-Age of stars 144
A rule for objects 144
[The Wrong Calculations of Astronomers Concerning Mars]: 146
[The Wrong Calculations of Astronomers Concerning Jupiter]: 146
The day and night 147
- [A miracle of the Quran: the authentic word of God :] 147
The rain 152
The snow 155
The hailstone 155

- The Lightning of the Cloud 157
The tide 158
Springs 160
Second Part: The Destruction and Dispersion of Objects 161
Destruction of objects and their dispersion 161
The standstill of the earth 163
How the terrestrial planets will stand still 167
-[An Explanation by the translator] 168
Sunspots 171
[The mistake of Astronomers concerning sunspots :] 171
The world that is burning 174
The earth approaches the sun 176
- [A scientific miracle of the Quran:] 177
The plant will burn and rivers will dry up 180
The Fixation of moon 184
The Fission of Moon into two halves 185
The meteorites will move towards the sun 188
The sky will be Distributed 189
Repentance will not be accepted on that day 190
Falling of the comets down upon the earth 193
[The Oath or Swearing in the Quran:] 197
The sun will burst 201
The sky will be filled with fire and smoke 205
The blowing through the Horn 207
The earthquake [of Doomsday] 212

The planets will break up 216
- Comment by the translator 220
Mountains will be dispersed 221
The sky will be cleft 223
The gaseous layers [on Doomsday] 228
What is Doomsday? 229
- Another scientific miracle of the Quran: the individual variation in finger prints 232
Formation of new planets 236
A remark about the heat wave that has recently overwhelmed the world 239
The End (of the book) 240
References 241

The planets will break up 216
- Comment by the translator 220
Mountains will be dispersed 221
The sky will be cleft 223
The gaseous layers [on Doomsday] 228
What is Doomsday? 229
- Another scientific miracle of the Quran: the individual variation in finger prints 232
Formation of new planets 236
A remark about the heat wave that has recently overwhelmed the world 239
The End (of the book) 240
References 241

THE UNIVERSE AND THE HOLY QURAN

Scoop from the knowledge of the Glorious Quran.

The Scientific miracle of the Arabic Quran: the authentic word of God.

Read in this book:

1. The existence of life on Mars and some other planets.
2. The existence of plants, animals and intelligent human beings on the planets.
3. The mistake of Astronomers concerning Pluto: Pluto is not a planet, but a moon of Neptune.
4. The mistake of Astronomers concerning Sunspots.
5. The mistake of Astronomers about the Asteroids.
6. The origin of mountains: God –be exalted- cast them on Earth, from the space; most of the mountains are parts of the broken up planets of the past solar system.
7. What is the Last Day?
8. What is Doomsday?

… And many other valuable subjects.